

# 1. INTRODUCTION

WATCH THE 1 ½ HOUR **FREE** MOVIE ON OUR WEBSITE AND GET A FREE ELECTRONIC COPY OF THE LATEST EDITION OF THIS BOOK! Visit the following address on the web:  
<http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>

*Page*

<b>1.</b>	<b>INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>1-1</b>
<b>1.1</b>	<b>HELP! Where can I get help with my tax problem? .....</b>	<b>1-10</b>
<b>1.2</b>	<b>Summary of the Purpose of This Document.....</b>	<b>1-11</b>
<b>1.3</b>	<b>Who Is This Document Intended To Help? .....</b>	<b>1-23</b>
<b>1.4</b>	<b>Why Should I Believe This Book or Your Website? .....</b>	<b>1-23</b>
	1.4.1 Mission Statement.....	1-24
	1.4.2 Motivation and Inspiration.....	1-40
	1.4.3 Ministry.....	1-41
	1.4.4 Schooling .....	1-44
	1.4.5 Criticism .....	1-45
	1.4.6 Pricing.....	1-46
	1.4.7 Frequently Asked Questions About Us.....	1-47
	1.4.7.1 Question 1: Do you file tax returns or pay income tax? .....	1-47
	1.4.7.2 Question 2: Do you have any court cites favorable to your position? .....	1-48
	1.4.7.3 Question 3: Isn't it a contradiction for you to be working for the government on the one hand and criticizing that government on the other hand? .....	1-50
	1.4.7.4 Question 4: Isn't it a contradiction to be paid by the very tax dollars from the government that you tell people not to pay? .....	1-51
	1.4.7.5 Question 5: Do you have to quote the Bible so much? .....	1-54
	1.4.7.6 Question 6: Aren't you endangering yourself by criticizing government? .....	1-55
	1.4.7.7 Question 7: How come I can't select or copy text from the electronic version of this document? .....	1-56
	1.4.7.8 Question 8: I'm afraid to act on the contents of this book. What should I do? .....	1-56
<b>1.5</b>	<b>Who Is Really Liable for the Income Tax? .....</b>	<b>1-58</b>
<b>1.6</b>	<b>Amazing Facts About the Income Tax .....</b>	<b>1-59</b>
<b>1.7</b>	<b>So if most Americans don't need to pay income tax, how could so many people be fooled for so long? .....</b>	<b>1-63</b>
<b>1.8</b>	<b>Our Own Ignorance, Laziness, Arrogance, Disorganization, and Apathy: Public Enemy #1 1-66</b>	
<b>1.9</b>	<b>Political "Tax Prisoners" .....</b>	<b>1-73</b>
<b>1.10</b>	<b>What Attitude are Christians Expected to Have About This Document? .....</b>	<b>1-82</b>
	1.10.1 Jesus Christ, The Son of God, was a Tax Protester! .....	1-82
	1.10.2 The Fifth Apostle Jesus Called and the First "Sinners" Called to Repentance Were Tax Collectors .....	1-86
	1.10.3 The FIRST to Be Judged By God Will Be Those Who Took The Mark of the Beast: The Socialist (Social) Security Number.....	1-89
	1.10.4 Our Obligations as Christians .....	1-90

1           1.10.5    You Can't Trust Lawyers or Most Politicians ..... 1-95

2           1.10.6    How can I wake up fellow Christians to the truths in this book? ..... 1-96

3           **1.11 Common Objections to the Recommendations In This Document With Rebuttal .... 1-98**

4           1.11.1    Why can't you just pay your taxes like everyone else?..... 1-98

5           1.11.2    What do you mean my question is irrelevant?..... 1-99

6           1.11.3    How Come my Accountant or Tax Attorney Doesn't Know This?..... 1-99

7           1.11.4    Why Doesn't the Media Blow the Whistle on This?..... 1-102

8           1.11.5    Why Won't the IRS and the U.S. Congress Tell Us The Truth?..... 1-103

9           1.11.6    But how will government function if we don't pay?..... 1-105

10          1.11.7    What kind of benefits could the government provide WITHOUT taxes? ..... 1-105

11          1.11.8    I Believe You But I'm Too Afraid to Confront the IRS..... 1-108

12          1.11.9    The Views Expressed in This Book are Overly Dogmatic or Extreme ..... 1-111

13          **1.12 Detailed Analysis of Societal Impact of Ending Federal Income Taxes..... 1-112**

14

15

1 "The power to tax is the power to destroy."  
2 [John Marshal, U.S. Supreme Court Justice, *M'Culloch v. Maryland*, 4 Wheat. 316, 431]

3 Let us begin this document by explaining what we mean by "The Great IRS Hoax?". The hoax is NOT the Internal Revenue  
4 Code, but the way that it is misrepresented and illegally enforced by the IRS and the Department of Justice. The Internal  
5 Revenue Code itself is entirely Constitutional when interpreted and enforced consistent with the rules of statutory construction  
6 and interpretation. Unfortunately, public dis-servants have been bending the rules to suit their own private agenda, and this  
7 is where the hoax and the fraud extensively documented in this book originates.

8 Do you love America? How about the Internal Revenue Service? Do you think we live in a free country? Do you think that  
9 you are "liable" to both file tax returns and pay income taxes to the federal government as an American Citizen (not statutory  
10 U.S. citizen) domiciled and working in the 50 Union states? Do you think you fit the description of a statutory "employee"  
11 found in the Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle C and the implementing regulations found in 26 C.F.R. §31.3401(c)? Do you  
12 think as a private (non-governmental) employer that you are liable to withhold those taxes? Do you think you are a "U.S.  
13 citizen" as legally defined? Do you think that federal judges are ethical and honorable men of integrity? **Boy have you been**  
14 **deceived, and by your own government no less! So was I before my eyes were opened in the process of researching and**  
15 **writing this book. I guarantee that the contents of this book will absolutely shock you! Reading it will change your**  
16 **perspective forever about the government and the IRS!** If you care at all about your freedom and your liberty and this  
17 wonderful country of ours, then you will simply not be able to put this book down, which is the same way we feel about  
18 continuing to improve and expand it! Once you learn the *amazing* truths in this book, you will want to share it with everyone  
19 in your life, and especially those you love, because:

20 "Liberty, man's highest value, is simply love disguised."  
21 [Family Guardian Fellowship]

22 Our experience has shown that once you catch what we call "the liberty bug", it's an incurable condition that you will *never*  
23 get rid of. Eternal vigilance is the chronic symptom thereafter, because of the *profound* realization that you can't trust  
24 government to give you liberty. Instead, you must *demand* it continually from the government and fight for it or lose it and  
25 thereby become perpetual slaves to a false god called government.

26 "Bravery or slavery, take your pick, because your covetous government is going to force you to choose one!"  
27 [Family Guardian Fellowship]

28 The only people who don't respond honorably and positively to hearing the truths in this book are those whose conscience is  
29 so seared that they are only reading this book for selfish reasons, and those are precisely the people who are reading and using  
30 this book in violation of the copyright! Shame on you! The reason we don't want selfish and evil people reading this book  
31 is because it was selfishness and greed on the part of government "dis-servants" that put our tax system into the massive legal  
32 and moral mess and conflict of interest that it is in to begin with! Instead, Christ calls us to deny ourselves and our lusts and  
33 covetousness for money and wealth and take up His cross. Our cross in this case consists in being persecuted, harassed, and  
34 tormented by wicked and covetous government servants for following the laws to the letter, questioning authority, and  
35 pursuing justice and truth:

36 "Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it  
37 is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."  
38 [Matt. 19:23-24, Bible, NKJV]

39 "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever  
40 desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it."  
41 [Matt. 16:24-25, Bible, NKJV]

42 "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me."  
43 [Luke 9:23, Bible, NKJV]

44 In this book, we will tell you the truth about income taxes that the IRS and our deceitful federal and state governments don't  
45 want you to hear and which they will NEVER print in any of their publications or on their websites, and this truth will indeed  
46 make you free and give you peace once and for all! This truth will also sanctify you and set you apart from most of the people  
47 you know and they will sense the difference in you, so much so that they may even think wrongfully that you are crazy!:

1                   *"They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. **Sanctify them by Your truth. Your word is truth.** As*  
 2                   *You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, **that they***  
 3                   ***also may be sanctified by the truth.**"*  
 4                   *[John 17:16-19, Bible, NKJV]*

5 You will also learn that there have been many others before us who attempted to spread the truth on this subject and who  
 6 were targeted for prosecution and harassment by the IRS in violation of our Constitutional First Amendment right of free  
 7 speech. Like others before us, we have experienced IRS persecution ourselves, in the form of regular virus-infected emailings  
 8 and cyber-attacks on our website following the release of this book, most likely by the selfsame government that is supposed  
 9 to be protecting and defending our Constitution and rights.

10 The amazing findings in this document will attempt to give you plenty of reasons to love America and its prudent founding  
 11 fathers who wisely framed the Constitution that started it all, while giving you plenty reasons to ***dislike and distrust those in***  
 12 ***the government who perpetuate and protect the ongoing criminal activities*** documented herein. This scam started in 1913,  
 13 when our government began pretending that there was an income tax on human beings following the fraudulent passage of  
 14 the 16th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution:

15                   *"The love of money is the root of all evil."*  
 16                   *[1 Tim. 6:10, Bible, NKJV]*

17 This document will examine how the U.S. Government lets the IRS (at arms' length, of course, because there is no 26 U.S.C.  
 18 statute giving it authority or putting it into being) do its fraudulent (lying) dirty work in getting money to fund its socialist  
 19 programs that abuse the law and Americans to plunder your property and we will see just how much evil there is in the  
 20 government's love of YOUR money. We will see:

- 21 1. How the system of checks and balances wisely envisioned by our Christian founding fathers have been
- 22 circumvented illegally by devious and dishonest lawyer/politicians in the federal government through the
- 23 federal income tax, and how this is threatening our freedoms, our privacy, and our standard of living.
- 24 2. How the evil and idolatrous socialist beast that controls the IRS and the U.S. Government and oppresses us is
- 25 fed by the usury we *volunteer* for called the Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A.
- 26 3. How low some federal government bureaucrats will stoop to take your money from you by force or fraud and
- 27 in violation of your constitutional and due process rights and the laws that limit and define their delegated
- 28 powers.
- 29 4. How the main reason people falsely believe that there is an income tax on natural persons has to do with their
- 30 willingness to believe the lies of their tyrannical and corrupted government servants:

31                   *"The simple believes every word, but the prudent considers well his steps [and reads the law for himself to see if*  
 32                   *his elected representatives are telling the truth!]."*  
 33                   *[Prov. 14:15, Bible, NKJV]*

- 34 5. That there is a tangled web of conspiracy, perjury, fraud, obfuscation, ignorance, intimidation, and violation
- 35 of due process behind how we got to the confused and deceived state most Americans and employers are in
- 36 when it comes to understanding the federal income tax code and abiding by it.
- 37 6. How the states of the Union, for the most part, have conspired with the federal government to enslave you to
- 38 an imaginary "income tax" and unjust laws by creating incentives for you to become "U.S. citizens" who have
- 39 been stripped of your sovereignty and the constitutional rights that protect your liberties. They have done this
- 40 in the name of "cooperative federalism".
- 41 7. That there are a lot of people, including those in government and the legal profession, who know the truth but
- 42 have evaded and shirked their responsibility to inform their fellow Americans and loved ones for fear of
- 43 reprisal and mockery and loss of their livelihood and professional license.

44                   *"The lips of the wise disperse knowledge, but the heart of the fool does not do so."*  
 45                   *[Prov. 15:7, Bible, NKJV]*

46 We will also see how the love and covetousness of YOUR money by corrupt "public servants" in the U.S. Government leads  
 47 to two other equally damaging evils and sins (violations of God's laws) on the part of the U.S. Government:

48                   *"Thou shalt not steal."*  
 49                   *[Exodus 20:15]*

1 "Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor.."  
2 [Exodus 20:16]

3 Later on in section 2.8.9.1, you will learn that what Jesus meant in the above is really "lusting" for money and the dishonesty  
4 and evil that coveting it can lead to. There is nothing wrong with loving the process of earning an honest living, as long as  
5 we are generous and charitable and prudent and honorable about how we earn it and spend it. As a matter of fact, the Bible  
6 in Ecclesiastes 5:18 agrees with this conclusion:

7 "Here is what I have seen: It is good and fitting for one to eat and drink, and to enjoy the good of all his labor in  
8 which he toils under the sun all the days of his life which God gives him; for it is his heritage."  
9 [Ecc. 5:18, Bible, NKJV]

10 But if our agents and servants and representatives in government obtain our money through deceit, dishonesty, immorality,  
11 and unlawful and evil acts, like most of the people who work for the IRS, then our means of living is counted as covetousness  
12 and evil, which is a grave sin according to Jesus in Luke 12:13-21. The Bible says in no uncertain terms that we should find  
13 such evil behavior contemptible and abominable and rebuke it publicly and frequently, as you will see below. And for those  
14 of you who think that hating what the IRS, who is ostensibly our "servant", does to destroy our liberties is not a biblical or  
15 family value or is wrong, we refer you to the following scriptures contradicting such a misinformed conclusion, and notice  
16 that the focus of the hatred is not people, but bad and evil behavior and the organizations and laws that foster it (God loves  
17 the sinner, but he hates the sin because sin hurts our brother and separates us from God and the people around us):

18 "If God had been a Liberal, we wouldn't have had the Ten Commandments, we'd have had the Ten Suggestions."  
19 [Malcolm Bradbury]

20 "Let love be without hypocrisy. Abhor what is evil. Cling to what is good."  
21 [Romans 12:9, Bible, NKJV]

22 "You who love the Lord, hate evil! He preserves the souls of His saints; He delivers them out of the hand of the  
23 wicked."  
24 [Psalm 97:10]

25 "An unjust man is an abomination to the righteous: and he who is upright in the way is an abomination to the  
26 wicked."  
27 [Prov. 29:27, Bible, NKJV]

28 "The boastful shall not stand in your sight: You hate all workers of iniquity."  
29 [Psalm 5:5, Bible, NKJV]

30 "Through Your precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way.  
31 [Psalm 119:104, Bible, NKJV]

32 "Let us hear the conclusion of this whole matter: Fear [respect] God and keep His commandments, for this is  
33 man's all. For God will bring every work into judgment, including every secret thing, whether good or evil."  
34 [Eccl. 12:13-14]

35 "The fear of the Lord is to hate evil: Pride and arrogance and the evil way And the perverse mouth I hate."  
36 [Proverbs 8:13]

37 "Do not let your heart envy sinners, but be zealous for the fear of the Lord all the day; for surely there is a  
38 hereafter, and your hope will not be cut off."  
39 [Prov. 23:17]

40 "By humility and fear of the Lord are riches and honor and life."  
41 [Prov. 22:4]

42 "These six things the Lord hates, yes seven are an abomination to Him:  
43 A proud look,  
44 A lying tongue,  
45 Hands that shed innocent blood,  
46 A heart that devises wicked plans, [IRS revenue agents]  
47 Feet that are swift in running to evil,  
48 A false witness who speaks lies, [IRS]  
49 And one who sows discord among brethren." [illegally imposed income taxes and the financial problems they  
50 create destroy families, and the number one cause of divorce is disputes over money]  
51 [Prov. 6:16-19]

1 “Do I not **hate** them, O Lord, who hate You? And do I not loathe those who rise up against You? **I hate them**  
2 **with perfect hatred; I count them my enemies.**”  
3 [Psalm 139:21-22]

4 “**I hate and abhor lying.** But I love Your law.”  
5 [Psalm 119:163]

6 “**A righteous man hates lying.** But a wicked man is loathsome and comes to shame.”  
7 [Prov. 13:5]

8 “For everything there is a season, a time for every purpose under heaven: ..... A time to love, and a time to hate.”  
9 [Ecclesiastes 3:1-8]

10 “But **those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them.**”  
11 [Prov. 24:25]

12 “The ear that hears the rebukes of life will abide among the wise. He who disdains instruction despises his own  
13 soul, but he who heeds rebuke gets understanding.”  
14 [Prov. 15:31-32, Bible, NKJV]

15 “**He who rebukes a man will find more favor afterward than he who flatters with the tongue.**”  
16 [Prov. 28:23]

17 **God, in the scriptures above, even commands us to reprove and rebuke evil when we encounter it,** and we can’t rebuke that  
18 which we can’t judge, so we better judge!:

19 “Judge not according to appearance, but **judge righteous judgment.**”  
20 [John 7:24, Jesus speaking in the Bible]

21 “Take heed to yourselves. **If your brother sins against you, rebuke him;** and if he repents, forgive him.”  
22 [Luke 17:3, Bible, NKJV. QUESTION: How can you rebuke as Jesus commands here if you can’t first judge or  
23 discern bad behavior?]

24 “And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, **but rather expose [rebuke] them.**”  
25 [Eph. 5:11, Bible]

26 “The violence of the wicked will destroy them because they refuse to do justice.”  
27 [Prov. 21:7, Bible, NKJV]

28 God’s Holy word should be the only basis for our rebuke of the sin of others in the world:

29 “**All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for**  
30 **instruction in righteousness,** that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.”  
31 [2 Tim. 3:16-17, Bible, NKJV]

32 Even the Apostle Paul, who some people falsely say told us not to judge, rebuked those who taught falsehoods, and his words  
33 below pretty much sum up exactly the state the IRS and our deceitful government is in today and what it is doing to pervert  
34 our country. Here are his strong words of rebuke, from [Titus 1:10-16](#):

35 “**For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers** [at the  
36 IRS], specially they of the circumcision:

37 **Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses**  
38 **[and families], teaching [and saying] things which they ought**  
39 **not, for filthy lucre’s [money’s] sake.**

40 One of themselves, [even] a prophet of their own [IRS Commissioner Rossotti], said, The Cretians [are] always  
41 liars, evil beasts, slow bellies [the tax protesters].

42 This witness is true. Wherefore **rebuke them [IRS and government] sharply.**  
43 that they may be sound in the faith;

1 Not giving heed to Jewish fables [in this case, the Internal Revenue Manual or the IRS Publications], and  
 2 commandments of men [their 800 telephone support service, that gives wrong advice over 60% of the time by the  
 3 IRS' own admission], that turn from the truth.

4 Unto the pure all things [are] pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving [is] nothing pure [the IRS and  
 5 the Congress]; but even their mind and conscience is defiled [their conscience has been warped because they  
 6 took a bribe, in violation of Exodus 23:8].

7 They profess that they know God [and at least PRETEND that they love their brother and the people they serve];  
 8 but in [EVIL] works they deny [Him], **being abominable, and disobedient, and**  
 9 **unto every good work reprobate.**”  
 10 [Titus 1:10-16, Bible, NKJV]

11 Does it sound like the Apostle Paul was NOT judging above, and if he was, then why shouldn't we also? He was rebuking  
 12 EVIL, which is exactly what God commands us to do throughout the Bible. As a matter of fact, the only purpose of our  
 13 criminal justice system is to rebuke and punish evil, and our police get their delegated authority from us, the sovereign people,  
 14 so we must have that authority to begin with. Paul's approach derives from the following scriptures:

15 “For the commandment is a lamp, and the law [God's law] the light; Reproofs of instruction are a way of life..”  
 16 [Prov. 6:23, Bible, NKJV]

17 “Rebuke one who has understanding and he will discern knowledge.”  
 18 [Prov. 19:25, Bible, NKJV]

19 “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.”  
 20 [Romans 13:9, Bible, NKJV]

21 “**As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten.** Therefore be zealous and repent.”  
 22 [Rev. 3:18, Bible, NKJV]

23 If our faith be not evidenced by such righteous works of reproof and rebuke, then of what political good or relevance can we  
 24 be in a lost world with such DEAD faith (see [James 2:17-20](#))? How can we as Christians be sanctified as the salt and light  
 25 of the world and the blessing to the world that God intended with no such works? How can we have the “fruit”, which is  
 26 God's blessing of peace and prosperity, without the “root”, which is courage and faith and morality evidenced by our works  
 27 and obedience to God's laws found in the Bible? Remember the parable that Jesus used about how we as Christians are trees  
 28 and must bear fruit or be cast into the fire?:

29 “Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch [you] cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither  
 30 can you, unless you abide in Me. I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him,  
 31 bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a  
 32 branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned. If you abide  
 33 in Me, and My words abide you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you. **By this My**  
 34 **Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.** As the Father loved  
 35 Me, I also have loved you; abide in My love. **If you keep [DO, not just hypocritically talk about] My**  
 36 **commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept my Father's commandments and abide in His**  
 37 **love.** These things I have spoken to you, that My joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be full.”  
 38 [John 15:4-11, Bible, NKJV]

39 **You're not one of God's followers if you don't bear the fruit of righteousness and mercy and truth by rebuking and**  
 40 **punishing evil behavior, folks!** That's what it means to be a Christian: One who regards the Bible as a law book and obeys  
 41 and enforces it as such. The purpose of the courts is to rebuke and punish evil, and if we are the sovereigns and masters  
 42 over our servant government, then we are just as entitled as the servant courts to rebuke evil. How can the servant be greater than  
 43 the master?<sup>1</sup> The only reason for any Christian to think otherwise is IGNORANCE of what God's word says and ignorance  
 44 of the basis for our Constitutional government. Ignorance and sin are our biggest enemy, folks, and the only way to eliminate  
 45 these two evils are rebuke and education of those who perpetrate them to inform them of their error and encourage them to  
 46 remedy it. Based on the scriptures above, if you are going to accuse the author of spreading a message of hate, you will also  
 47 have to:

<sup>1</sup> In John 15:20, Jesus said: “Remember the word that I said to you: ‘A servant is not greater than his master’.”

1. Advocate the elimination of the police and the courts, whose only function is to hate evil. This would only encourage lawlessness and anarchy.
2. Commit blasphemy against a sovereign God by telling Him that He is wrong. In the process of doing this, you risk suffering His wrath on judgment day. See section 1.8 later for further treatment of the sin of ignorance.

If you don't do both of the above, you will be accused of being a hypocrite and practicing religious discrimination. If you would like to know more about why you must rebuke and reprove and judge in order to do justice as the Lord commands, read our series on "A Call for Discernment" by John MacArthur on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Articles/Discernment/Discernment.htm>

How should we rebuke sin? The Bible once again tells us:

*"And the servant of the Lord must not quarrel but be gentle to all, able to teach, patient, in humility correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth, and that they may come to their senses and escape the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him to do his will."*  
[2 Tim. 2:24-26, Bible, NKJV]

To summarize:

***"Violation of the Constitution and the  
Internal Revenue Code are revolting.....  
why aren't you?!"***

Another good book about why you can't remain passive or politically isolated either as a citizen or as a Christian is the following:

*Why You Can't Stay Silent: A Biblical Mandate to Shape Our Culture*  
by Tom Minnery, Tyndale House Publishers, Wheaton, Illinois, ISBN 1-56179-925-4

This book therefore represents my attempt to fulfill the Godly calling described above of judging and rebuking evil on a grand scale within our own government. *It is not a message of hate, but of love toward hard-working Americans everywhere who deserve a lot more respect and protection of their fundamental liberties from their government than they have been getting of late.* Likewise, for those of you who already have your act together and have been informed of the truth by this book, our hats are off to you and we want to thank you and pray for God's blessings and His grace upon you.

By the time you finish chapter 2 of this book, you will realize that you as a moral person with religious faith cannot sit passively and watch your government commit all the evils documented in this book. You will realize that your passiveness, in fact, is what has allowed things to get as bad as they have become and that the only way to reverse the trend is to become politically and legally active before it is simply too late. Below is a passage of the Bible that describes what will happen to us if we don't begin judging, rebuking, and opposing the massive evil described in this book:

*"Run to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem;  
See now and know;  
And seek in her open places  
If you can find a man,  
**If there is anyone who executes judgment,  
Who seeks the truth,  
And I will pardon her.**  
Though they say, "As the LORD lives,  
Surely they swear falsely."*

*O LORD, are not Your eyes on the truth?  
You have stricken them,  
But they have not grieved;  
You have consumed them,  
But they have refused to receive correction.*



1                   *They have made their faces harder than rock;*  
2                   *They have refused to return [to Your ways].*

3                   *Therefore I said, "Surely these are poor.*  
4                   **They are foolish;**  
5                   **For they do not know the way of the LORD,**  
6                   **The judgment of their God.**  
7                   *I will go to the great men and speak to them,*  
8                   *For they have known the way of the LORD,*  
9                   *The judgment of their God."*

10                  *But these have altogether broken the yoke*  
11                  *And burst the bonds.*  
12                  ***Therefore a lion from the forest shall slay them,***  
13                  ***A wolf of the deserts shall destroy them;***  
14                  ***A leopard will watch over their cities.***  
15                  ***Everyone who goes out from there shall be torn in pieces,***  
16                  ***Because their transgressions are many;***  
17                  ***Their backslidings have increased.***

18                  *"How shall I pardon you for this?*  
19                  *Your children have forsaken Me*  
20                  *And sworn [on tax returns] by those [in government] that are not gods.*  
21                  *When I had fed them to the full,*  
22                  *Then they committed adultery [and fornication and sexual perversity]*  
23                  *And assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses.*  
24                  *They were like well-fed lusty stallions;*  
25                  *Every one neighed after his neighbor's wife [sexual perversion].*  
26                  *Shall I not punish them for these things?" says the LORD.*  
27                  *"And shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?"*

28                  ***"Go up on her walls and destroy,***  
29                  ***But do not make a complete end.***  
30                  ***Take away her branches,***  
31                  ***For they are not the LORD's.***  
32                  ***For the house of Israel and the house of Judah***  
33                  ***Have dealt very treacherously with Me," says the LORD.***

34                  ***They have lied about the LORD [evolutionism],***  
35                  ***And said, "It is not He.***  
36                  ***Neither will evil come upon us,***  
37                  ***Nor shall we see sword or famine.***  
38                  ***And the prophets become wind,***  
39                  ***For the word is not in them.***  
40                  ***Thus shall it be done to them."***

41                  *Therefore thus says the LORD God of hosts:*

42                  ***"Because you speak this word,***  
43                  ***Behold, I will make My words in your mouth fire,***  
44                  ***And this people wood,***  
45                  ***And it shall devour them.***  
46                  ***Behold, I will bring a nation [in the District of Columbia, Washington D.C.] against you from afar,***  
47                  ***O house of Israel," says the LORD.***  
48                  ***"It is a mighty nation,***  
49                  ***It is an ancient nation,***  
50                  ***A nation whose language [legalese] you do not know,***  
51                  ***Nor can you understand what they say [in their deceitful laws].***  
52                  ***Their quiver is like an open tomb;***  
53                  ***They are all mighty [deceitful] men.***  
54                  ***And they [and the IRS, their henchmen] shall eat up your harvest and your bread,***  
55                  ***Which your sons and daughters should eat.***  
56                  ***They shall eat up your flocks and your herds;***  
57                  ***They shall eat up your vines and your fig trees;***  
58                  ***They shall destroy your fortified cities [and businesses and families],***  
59                  ***In which you trust, with the sword.***

1 "Nevertheless in those days," says the LORD, "I will not make a complete end of you.<sup>19</sup> And it will be when you  
2 say, "Why does the LORD our God do all these things to us?" then you shall answer them, "Just as you have  
3 forsaken Me and served foreign gods in your land, so you shall serve aliens in a land that is not yours."

4 "Declare this in the house of Jacob  
5 And proclaim it in Judah, saying,  
6 "Hear this now, O foolish people,  
7 Without understanding [ignorant and presumptuous],  
8 Who have eyes and see not,  
9 And who have ears and hear not:  
10 Do you not fear Me?" says the LORD.  
11 "Will you not tremble at My presence,  
12 Who have placed the sand as the bound of the sea,  
13 By a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass beyond it?  
14 And though its waves toss to and fro,  
15 Yet they cannot prevail;  
16 Though they roar, yet they cannot pass over it.  
17 **But this people has a defiant and rebellious heart;**  
18 **They have revolted and departed.**  
19 **They do not say in their heart,**  
20 **"Let us now fear the LORD our God,**  
21 **Who gives rain, both the former and the latter, in its season.**  
22 **He reserves for us the appointed weeks of the harvest."**  
23 **Your iniquities have turned these things away,**  
24 **And your sins have withheld good from you.**

25 "For among My people are found wicked men [the IRS, federal reserve, bankers, lawyers, and politicians];  
26 They lie in wait as one who sets snares;  
27 They set a trap;  
28 They catch men [with deceit and greed as their weapon].  
29 As a cage is full of birds,  
30 So their houses are full of deceit [IRS publications and law books and government propaganda].  
31 **Therefore they have become great and grown rich [from plundering YOUR money illegally].**  
32 **They have grown fat, they are sleek;**  
33 **Yes, they surpass the deeds of the wicked;**  
34 **They do not plead the cause,**  
35 **The cause of the fatherless;**  
36 **Yet they prosper,**  
37 **And the right of the needy they do not defend.**  
38 **Shall I not punish them for these things?" says the LORD.**  
39 **"Shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?"**

40 **"An astonishing and horrible thing**  
41 **Has been committed in the land:**  
42 *The prophets prophesy falsely,*  
43 *And the priests [federal judges] rule by their own power;*  
44 **And My people love to have it so.**  
45 *But what will you do in the end?"*  
46 *[Jeremiah 5, Bible, NKJV, Emphasis added]*

### 47 1.1 **HELP! Where can I get help with my tax problem?**

48 If you want educational assistance with your immediate tax problem, then you are looking in the wrong book. You should  
49 instead refer to the *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008 at:

*Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

50 The *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008 is only intended for "nontaxpayers" and statutory "non-resident noni-  
51 persons" who are not liable under the law for federal income taxes and who are not subject to the Internal Revenue Code.  
52 We do *not* suggest reading or using the *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual* unless and until you have at least read chapters three  
53 through five of this book and tried your best to understand them. If you don't follow this suggestion, we predict that you can  
54 and probably will do yourself harm in trying to use that book because:

55 "...it is not good for a soul to be without knowledge,"

1 [Prov. 19:2, Bible, NKJV]

2 "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge."  
3 [Hosea 4:6, Bible, NKJV]

4 "One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."  
5 [Prov. 28:9, Bible, NKJV]

6 If you are a "nontaxpayer" and want further education or help responding to illegal IRS enforcement action, then the following  
7 website probably has the educational information you are seeking:

8 <http://sedm.org/>

9 Likewise, if you are a "taxpayer", then you are looking in the wrong place for educational or helpful materials and should  
10 instead consult <http://www.irs.gov> for educational materials.

## 11 **1.2 Summary of the Purpose of This Document**

12 The purpose of this document is to fully expose the nature and history of the illegal and criminal mis-enforcement of the  
13 federal and state tax codes within the United States of America by both the Internal Revenue Service (I.R.S.) and state taxing  
14 authorities. This is not a "how-to" book and we will not show you how to stop the illegal activities of the I.R.S. or the state  
15 tax authorities because that topic is reserved exclusively for the book below:

16 *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008

17 <http://sedm.org/ItemInfo/Ebooks/TaxFraudPrevMan/TaxFraudPrevMan.htm>

18 We would also like to emphasize that this book is intended only for people who have faith in God. If you don't believe in  
19 God, the Bible says it is entirely impossible for you to be sovereign over your own affairs. In fact, the book of Judges in the  
20 Bible teaches us that the result of not believing in and obeying God is sin, slavery, and servitude for everyone in society as  
21 follows:

- 22 1. When Israel elected their first King, Saul, and Saul transgressed and rejected the word and the commandments of God  
23 and tried to do things his way and please the people instead of please God, he was stripped of his sovereignty. The moral  
24 of the story is that sovereignty is impossible without obedience to God, and those who are more concerned about what  
25 the neighbors or the government think about them (being politically correct) than what God thinks will be punished with  
26 servitude and slavery to other men:

27 *"Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. **For***  
28 ***rebellion [against God] is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an***  
29 ***iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He***  
30 ***also has rejected you from being king [or sovereign over your person and***  
31 ***the government that is supposed to serve you]."***

32 *Then Saul [the king] said to Samuel, "**I have sinned, for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord and***  
33 ***your words, because I feared the people [wanted to be politically correct instead of right with God] and obeyed***  
34 ***their voice [instead of God's voice].** Now therefore, please pardon my sin and return with me, that I may worship*  
35 *the Lord." But Samuel said to Saul [the king], "I will not return with you, for you have rejected the word of the*  
36 *Lord, and the Lord has rejected you from being king over Israel"*

37 *And as Samuel turned around to go away, Saul seized the edge of his robe, and it tore. So Samuel said to him,*  
38 *"The Lord has torn the kingdom of Israel from you today and has given it to a neighbor of yours, who is better*  
39 *than you."*  
40 *[1 Sam. 15:22-28, Bible, NKJV]*

- 41 2. Those people who will not obey or be ruled by God will be punished by Him, and it would be an act of rebellion and  
42 treason against God to interfere with the sovereign decision of God to punish them for their transgression:

1 "The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; **He will exalt the law and make it honorable. But this is**  
 2 **a people robbed and plundered!** [by the IRS] **All of them are snared in [legal] holes [by the sophistry of greedy**  
 3 **IRS lawyers], and they are hidden in prison houses; they are for prey, and no one delivers; for plunder, and**  
 4 **no one says, "Restore!"**."

5 **Who among you will give ear to this? Who will listen and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for**  
 6 **plunder, and Israel to the robbers? [IRS] Was it not the Lord, He against whom we have sinned? For they**  
 7 **would not walk in His ways, nor were they obedient to His law, therefore He has poured on him the fury of His**  
 8 **anger and the strength of battle; it has set him on fire all around, yet he did not know; and it burned him, yet he**  
 9 **did not take it to heart."**  
 10 [Isaiah 42:21-25, Bible, NKJV]

- 11 3. How does the Lord exalt His Law and make it holy and sanctified? The passage below says that He does this by allowing  
 12 people who violate His law to be persecuted in His name:

13 "For **you have trusted in your wickedness; you [the IRS and our wicked government] have said, 'No one sees**  
 14 **me'; your wisdom and your knowledge have warped you; and you have said in your heart, "I am and there is**  
 15 **no one else besides me. ' Therefore evil shall come upon you; you shall not know from where it arises [Iraq? Afghanistan? Who knows?]. And trouble shall come upon you; you shall not be able to put it off [war on terrorism**  
 16 **will have no end]. And desolation shall come upon you suddenly [9-11-2001 in New York City], which you shall**  
 17 **not know. Stand now with your enchantments [New Age philosophy, "people friendly" churches that don't preach**  
 18 **doctrine and God's word and have become vanity] and the multitude of your sorceries [drugs], in which you have**  
 19 **labored from your youth—perhaps you will be able to profit, perhaps you will prevail. You are wearied in the**  
 20 **multitude of your counsels [greedy lawyers and corrupt politicians who we have too many of in this country]; Let**  
 21 **now the astrologers, the stargazers [horoscopes, weathermen], and the monthly prognosticators [stock market**  
 22 **analysts] stand up and save you from these things that shall come upon you. Behold, **they shall be as stubble,****  
 23 **they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame;** it shall not be a coal to be warmed by, nor a fire  
 24 **to sit before! Thus shall they be to you with whom you have labored, your merchants from your youth; they shall**  
 25 **wander each one to his quarter. No one shall save you."**  
 26 [Isaiah 47:10-11, Bible, NKJV]

- 28 4. God thinks that those who try to make it without Him are fools, and His sovereign reward for those who attempt to go it  
 29 alone is slavery, sin, and oppression:

30 "**Woe to the rebellious children,**" says the Lord, "**Who take counsel, but not of Me, and who devise plans, but**  
 31 **not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who walk to go down to Egypt, and have not asked My advice,**  
 32 **to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore the**  
 33 **strength of Pharaoh shall be your shame, and trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your humiliation ...**

34 Now go, write it before them on a tablet, and note it on a scroll, that it may be for time to come, forever and ever:  
 35 that this is a rebellious people, **lying children, children who will not hear the law of the Lord;** who say to the  
 36 seers, "Do not see," and to the prophets, "Do not prophesy to us right things' **Speak to us smooth [politically**  
 37 **correct] things,** prophesy deceits. Get out of the way, turn aside from the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to  
 38 cease from before us."

39 Therefore thus says the Holy One of Israel:

40 "Because you despise this word, and trust in oppression and perversity, and rely on them, therefore this iniquity  
 41 **shall be to you like a breach ready to fall, a bulge in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly, in an instant.**  
 42 **And He shall break it like the breaking of the potter's vessel, which is broken in pieces; He shall not spare. So**  
 43 **there shall not be found among its fragments a shard to take fire from the hearth, or to take water from the**  
 44 **cistern."**  
 45 [Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14, Bible, NKJV]

- 46 5. Our Founding Fathers also agreed with the requirement for religious faith as a prerequisite for personal sovereignty:

47 "It is when a people forget God that tyrants forge their chains ..."  
 48 [Patrick Henry]

49 "Those people who are not governed by GOD will be ruled by tyrants."  
 50 [William Penn (after which Pennsylvania was named)]

51 "A free people [claim] their rights as derived from the laws of nature, and not as the gift of their chief magistrate."  
 52 [Thomas Jefferson: Rights of British America, 1774. ME 1:209, Papers 1:134 ]

53 "Can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the  
 54 minds of the people that these liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath?"

[Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XVIII, 1782. ME 2:227 ]

“Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God.”  
[Benjamin Franklin]

“Propitious smiles of heaven can never be expected on a nation that disregards the eternal rules of order and right which heaven itself has ordained.”  
[George Washington (1732-1799), First Inaugural Address]

This book will therefore devote itself exclusively to thoroughly convincing the reader of the following facts and conclusions using authoritative evidence from the government’s own mouth and using Natural Law concepts from the Bible and other books:

### 1. **Legal Education and Activism:**

- 1.1. Educate the general populace on legal issues.
- 1.2. Encourage people to pay to the government no more than enacted, positive law requires them to pay, and to avoid all voluntary financial relationships with the government.
- 1.3. Encourage freedom and liberty, which means promoting a much smaller and more limited federal government than we have now.
- 1.4. Encourage the values that made this country great, including belief in God, personal responsibility, rugged individualism, love for our fellow Americans, and strong reliance on family.
- 1.5. Educate the reader about the statutes and regulations governing federal or state income taxation.
- 1.6. Ensure that both the reader and more importantly their government, obeys every aspect of the laws on taxation.
- 1.7. Encourage people to be more involved in the political process.
- 1.8. Encourage an ethical and moral government that protects our Constitutional rights in its role as our fiduciary and public servant.

### 2. **Nature of Subtitle A Income Taxes:**

- 2.1. The Subtitle A income tax is and always has been an indirect excise tax according to the U.S. supreme Court..
- 2.2. Excise taxes are taxes on privileges granted to “persons” above and beyond those enjoyed by ordinary persons.
- 2.3. The only “persons” in receipt of taxable government privileges are:
  - 2.3.1. Businesses involved in licensed foreign commerce under 26 U.S.C. §7001:
    - 2.3.1.1. U.S. Corporations (not state corporations) involved only in foreign commerce.
    - 2.3.1.2. U.S. Partnerships (not those registered by states) involved only in foreign commerce.
    - 2.3.1.3. Officers of corporations involved in foreign commerce.
  - 2.3.2. Elected or appointed officers of the US. Government holding privileged public office, which is called a “trade or business” in the Internal Revenue Code.
- 2.4. For all other natural persons not meeting requirements defined above, filing returns and payment of Subtitle A income taxes are and always have been **voluntary and not mandatory.**

### 3. **Subtitles A and C Income Tax Jurisdiction of the U.S. Government:**

- 3.1. The U.S. government only has authority to assess and collect I.R.C., Subtitle A federal revenues within its territorial jurisdiction, which includes only the District of Columbia and other federal territories coming under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the U.S. Constitution.
- 3.2. Subtitles A and C of the I.R.C. only apply to:
  - 3.2.1. “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401, “residents” (meaning “aliens”) temporarily abroad under 26 C.F.R. §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) who have income effectively connected to a “trade or business”, meaning that they either hold or have elected to be treated as though they hold, public office in the U.S. government and are in receipt of federal payments.
  - 3.2.2. “nonresident alien INDIVIDUALS” (meaning public officers) who receive payments from the U.S. government that are connected with a “trade or business”, which means a public office as shown under 26 U.S.C. Section 861 and the implementing regulations found in 26 C.F.R. §1.861-8(f).
- 3.3. The only human beings who are statutory “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 are those who are born or naturalized in the District of Columbia or U.S. territories or other federal property subject to the exclusive legislative jurisdiction and sovereignty of the federal government (such as military bases, national parks, etc).
- 3.4. Most human beings living in our country are not “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401. They are instead “nationals” under 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) or under The Law of Nations, Vattel, but very few people understand this reality. Instead, most people have been deceived by a corrupt federal government and the legal profession into incorrectly believing they are “U.S. citizens” using tricky “words of art” definitions as a means of illegally expanding federal jurisdiction inside the sovereign states.

- 1 3.5. The 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment was originally intended to protect former slaves in the southern states following the Civil War  
 2 by allowing them to obtain federal citizenship through naturalization because their own states would not recognize  
 3 their citizenship. They could then have a type of substandard citizenship that would offer them limited  
 4 constitutional and statutory protections of their rights while they were living in hostile southern states who would  
 5 not recognize their rights. The 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment, however, was illegally ratified at gunpoint after the civil war and  
 6 at least one state supreme court (the Utah Supreme Court) has declared this fact to be the case. Ironically, following  
 7 the passage of the Sixteenth Amendment in 1913, the deceitful public servants misused the language of the 14<sup>th</sup>  
 8 Amendment to deceive “nationals of the United States” born in states of the Union into falsely believing that they  
 9 were “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 who were subject to federal laws and police powers, including the  
 10 Internal Revenue Code. Scoundrels in government thereby promoted untruths about citizenship and about the  
 11 Fourteenth Amendment in order to spread the very slavery that the amendment was intended to eliminate.
- 12 3.6. State and federal territorial jurisdictions, for the purposes of Subtitles A and C of the Internal Revenue Code, are  
 13 mutually exclusive. The only overlapping taxing authority is for Excise taxes found in Subtitle D.
- 14 3.7. The only “persons” who are “subject to” (but not necessarily *liable for*) state or federal income taxes for most states  
 15 are *nonresidents of the state*, who on paper live in federal areas or enclaves within the state called “this State” or  
 16 “State of” (see California Revenue and Taxation Code, Sections 6017 and 17018 as an example of this trick). The  
 17 states have tricked Americans into misstating the facts by claiming themselves and their children to be “U.S.  
 18 persons” or “U.S. citizens” and then taxing them under the Buck Act of 1940 as “U.S. citizens” living on federal  
 19 property. They have done this in order to get “kickbacks” from those that the IRS has deceived into participating  
 20 in a constructively fraudulent de facto tax system.
- 21 3.8. Confusion by Americans over the jurisdiction of the U.S. government to assess and enforce Subtitles A and C of  
 22 the I.R.C. focuses mainly on the definition of the term “United States” found in 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(9) and (a)(10).  
 23 The legal profession has deliberately perpetuated and enlarged this confusion by removing references to the  
 24 definitions of “United States” from every major legal dictionary currently in print within the United States of  
 25 America.
- 26 3.9. According to the California Revenue and Taxation Code, section 17019, “foreign country” is defined as anything  
 27 outside of federal property, not outside of the 50 Union states. This is consistent with the definition of “United  
 28 States” found in section 7701(a)(9) of the Internal Revenue Code, and *must* be consistent in order for amounts on  
 29 a federal tax return to transfer unaltered to a state income tax return for most amounts. It is also consistent with 40  
 30 U.S.C. §255, which only gives jurisdiction to the federal government on *federal property*. The Internal Revenue  
 31 Code does not define the term “foreign country” because our dishonest federal government doesn’t want you  
 32 knowing that you are a non-resident non-person with respect to the federal government personal income tax  
 33 jurisdiction:

34 *“17019 ‘Foreign country’ means any jurisdiction other than one embraced within the United States.”*

- 35 3.10. The Internal Revenue Code has been written in such a way that it is deliberately vague and overly complex so that  
 36 it creates the false impression that it has far more jurisdiction than it actually has.
- 37 3.11. The deliberate vagueness of the Internal Revenue Code ensures that Americans and men of ordinary intelligence  
 38 can’t understand it and are lead to the incorrect conclusion or presumption that they are liable for Subtitle A income  
 39 taxes and that they are “taxpayers”. This very vagueness is the reason that the code in total should have been  
 40 declared “void for vagueness” long ago by the supreme Court.
- 41 3.12. The vagueness of the I.R.C. also creates a windfall for the legal profession, because vagueness contributes to  
 42 increased litigation and an undue expansion of the influence and control of the legal profession over the rest of the  
 43 populace. This leads the legal profession to be able to easily plunder the assets of otherwise law abiding Americans,  
 44 who must hire legal counsel to defend their property rights against government extortion.
- 45 **4. Conspiracy to protect and expand the operation of Subtitle A income taxes:**
- 46 4.1. A U.S. Government conspiracy exists to protect and expand the illegal enforcement of federal income taxes inside  
 47 the 50 sovereign states of the Union. This conspiracy of fraud, ignorance, and deceit is perpetuated mainly by the  
 48 federal circuit courts, the IRS, and the legal profession, who all stand to gain handsomely from enforcing an  
 49 otherwise illegal tax. The supreme Court is part of the conspiracy because it has neglected its duty to keep the  
 50 circuit courts in line by denying appeals to it from people who have been wronged by such abuses. The Congress  
 51 is part of the Conspiracy because they refuse to write clear laws and refuse to discipline errant judges who have  
 52 been illegally helping them enforce an Internal Revenue Code that is not even law and does not obligate anyone to  
 53 do anything.
- 54 4.2. Our covetous public servants want your money and to control you so badly that they will do anything and  
 55 everything, which in most cases means violating enacted positive law and commit fraud and extortion. Such fraud

and extortion results in commission of acts of treason, war, and conspiracy against rights Americans across the country. These acts are illegal and unconstitutional in every respect and should be basis enough to impeach members of Congress.

**5. Chief tools of extortion:**

- 5.1. Social Security Numbers and the Social Security system are the vehicle that allows all of these abuses to continue.
- 5.2. Unless people unite and insist on their privacy and deny getting TINs and SSN's and deny illegal uses of SSNs as Taxpayer Identification Numbers (TINs), then this oppressive situation will get worse.
- 5.3. Although the federal government has no jurisdiction to require private individuals to use social security numbers with their financial accounts, the Federal Reserve and the ignorance of bank administrators about the law and unlawful coercion by the IRS causes the banks to force account holders to provide SSN's or be denied accounts in many cases. This amounts to a constructive conspiracy against rights of sovereign Americans of the 50 Union states. Ignorant, unquestioning compliance by Americans also helps perpetuate this gross violation of personal privacy.

**6. Why things never get better and keep getting worse:**

- 6.1. Judicial and official immunity on the part of judges and IRS agents and collusion by the federal courts are the main reasons the abuses by these individuals are not punished and corrected and why they continue.
- 6.2. Sovereign immunity, ignorance of the law, collusion by the legal profession against the rights of Americans in the pursuit of the almighty dollar, and the Anti-Injunction Act (26 U.S.C. §7421) are the reason why people have not been successful suing the government for illegally collecting taxes.
- 6.3. The government has created a regulatory structure around the income tax that is a hypocritical double-standard and which does NOT implement the requirement for equal protection found in our Constitution. This regulatory structure makes it more complex, costly, and frustrating to keep one's income and assets than it is to just give it away and give up the fight. For instance, the IRS issues illegal "Notice of Levies" without an actual levy issued by a court. This means they can fool employers and banks into illegally surrendering private property without a court order, and thereby force Citizens to have to litigate to get their property back, which oftentimes is more expensive than the value of the property that was plundered by the government to begin with.
- 6.4. When faced with this unfair situation, most rather passive Americans just throw up their hands and say:

*"I give up. Take my property but just leave me alone!"*

Under these circumstances, income taxes become "protection money" to keep the IRS extortionists off their back. This is no different in character from the actions of the Mafia. That is why people like Irwin Schiff refers to the I.R.S and corrupted judges in the federal judiciary who they control and terrorize as the "Federal Mafia".

- 6.5. Legal ignorance of the general populace and the deliberate technicalities of the legal profession prevent Americans from litigating without counsel to protect their rights. Furthermore, the legal, tax, accounting, and payroll professions, which are regulated by the government (conflict of interest) have no financial incentive to do the right thing and every incentive from the government to maintain the status quo and expand the operation of the income tax illegally.

**7. Solution:**

- 7.1. We need to get our own act together FIRST before we expect the government to get their act together. This means we need to:
  - 7.1.1. Stop thinking like socialists.
  - 7.1.2. Stop trying to put the government in charge of everything. The only thing the government is good at is screwing things up. The more things we can privatize the better.
  - 7.1.3. Take full and complete responsibility for supporting ourselves, our parents, and our families instead of expecting the government to help us, in the form of welfare, Social Security, and Medicare.
  - 7.1.4. Quit blaming the government for our problems and start doing what we can to fix things by getting personally involved with the political process and effecting reforms.
- 7.2. Nothing will change without passionate involvement of the citizenry on a large scale. It's time for another Boston Tea Party!
- 7.3. Since legal ignorance is why things have been allowed to get this bad, it's very important to get educated about the law and your rights. This book is a very good place to start with your education.
- 7.4. We encourage you to question every source of information, including this book. Verify the facts for yourself. When you know the truth, you can have the kind of passion that persuades juries and keeps you out of legal trouble.
- 7.5. Do your part in eliminating illegal enforcement of Subtitles A and C income taxes on Americans by the IRS:
  - 7.5.1. Follow the suggestions in this book to claim your rightful status as a non-resident non-person and then ask for a refund of all past taxes paid, and then stop withholding and paying income taxes.

1 7.5.2. Be an active and informed citizen.

2 7.5.3. Defend your rights and your privacy vigilantly against the IRS and the government, both in court and out of  
3 court.

4 7.5.4. Take every opportunity to expose and prosecute government corruption, malfeasance, and conflict of interest  
5 wherever you find it.

6 7.5.5. Don't misrepresent your citizenship or "taxpayer" status to public servants on government forms, because you  
7 will invite further abuse.

8 7.6. "nontaxpayers" should make tax collection as difficult, costly, and high maintenance an activity for the IRS as they  
9 can, so that the cost of collection and litigation will exceed the value of the monies collected.

10 7.7. Expose the truths in this book far and wide. Tell everyone you know about the fraud. When you talk to anyone on  
11 the phone, give them our web address and tell them they can get legally avoid ever having to pay federal income  
12 taxes by downloading and reading our free book. Most of the time, they will listen, and slowly but surely, the  
13 American public will be incentivized to get educated.

14 8. **Conflict of interest and government corruption**. Because of lust for power, greed, and dishonesty of most politicians,  
15 judges, and IRS/SSA employees, you can and should expect that employees and civil "servants" will:

16 8.1. Not disclose to citizens unless coerced the limits of their delegated authority or jurisdiction.

17 8.2. Never tell you how to quit the Social Security Program.

18 8.3. Never tell you how to rescind your Social Security Number.

19 8.4. Never state the truth about income taxes documented in this book because stealing your money is the source of their  
20 power.

21 8.5. Suppress efforts by Americans to establish the limits on their authority or jurisdiction.

22 8.6. Do everything in their power to provide as little information as possible about themselves via the Freedom Of  
23 Information Act (FOIA) and other similar laws.

24 8.7. Try through legislation and their operating procedures to maximize invasion of your privacy because this is how  
25 they maximize control over your life and make you into a hunted and vulnerable animal.

26 8.8. Ignore your correspondence or pretend like they lost it so they don't have to respond to it.

27 8.9. Nominate less than ethical men as judges to sit on the bench in federal courtrooms and refuse to punish or discipline  
28 the misconduct of those who are elected.

29 8.10. Use unethical, tyrannical, and downright evil methods to try to convict honest people who expose the truths in this  
30 book.

31 8.11. Ignore, avoid, or hide the requirement for consent on their forms using bureaucratic red tape and "words of art".

32 Thorough research and years of work by the author and many other patriotic Americans have led to the development of this  
33 document and the exposure of the Great Deception. The written law, specific court decisions, as well as case studies will be  
34 used to thoroughly document the extent of the illegal conspiracy being used to defraud you of your money. The goal is to  
35 build an "air tight" case that juries filled with ordinary people with little legal background can understand and trust to support  
36 the many claims that have been made in this document. This approach allows this book to be used not only as an educational  
37 vehicle for pro-se litigant Americans (notice we didn't say "taxpayers") who are affordably defending their constitutionally-  
38 guaranteed rights, but also allows it to become the starting point for any discussions that you might have with the IRS about  
39 your tax situation should you decide to undertake any of the options presented in chapter 3 of the Tax Fraud Prevention  
40 Manual, Form #06.008. We have also numbered each line in the book so that you can refer to specific passages if you decide  
41 to use this book as legal evidence or foundation of your good faith beliefs (see Cheek v. United States, 498 U.S. 192 (1991))  
42 in court against the government, and also for use in bringing to our attention any errors you might find so we can fix them in  
43 future versions of this book.

44 This document will use the written federal statutes, regulations, and U.S. Supreme Court Rulings themselves to document  
45 that the scope of the federal income tax is far more limited than the American public generally believes. It will be shown that  
46 while many types of "income" can be taxable, they can be taxable only if they come from specific taxable activities (a.k.a.  
47 "sources"), and it will be shown that the taxable "sources" apply only to those engaged in international or foreign commerce,  
48 but do not apply to American Citizens living and working exclusively within the 50 Union states and outside the federal  
49 United States. This document will also trace the history of federal income tax legislation to show you in black and white how  
50 the Great Deception has been craftily perfected over the years by our cunning elected representatives to be more convincing.  
51 Make no mistake about it, the greedy government wants your money desperately and they will undertake any number of  
52 unlawful, deceptive, and dishonest tactics to get it, including:

53 1. Writing deceptive and misleading and confusing statutes so they can convince you that you owe income tax to them in  
54 violation of your constitutional rights.



2. Ambiguously defining terms or using their legal rather than common definition in order to perpetuate the confusion and deception of people and employers, including:
  - 2.1 Ambiguously and incompletely defining "voluntary compliance" in IRS literature.
  - 2.2 Ambiguously defining the word "source" in the U.S. Code and the Code of Federal Regulations.
  - 2.3 Ambiguously defining the term "United States", which actually means the District of Columbia and NOT the 50 Union states, as far as the tax code is concerned.
  - 2.4 Ambiguously defining the term "States" in the Internal Revenue Code and the Code of Federal Regulations, which actually means federal possessions and territories and NOT the 50 Union states.
  - 2.5 Not providing a positive statement *anywhere* in the IRS publications or the law that states that Americans with income exclusively from within the 50 Union states are *not* subject to income tax.
  - 2.6 Deceptively defining the statutory word "employee" within the Internal Revenue Code and Code of Federal Regulations (which is actually a federal statutory "employee" and not a private worker, as the U.S. code defines it).
3. Perpetuating your ignorance about the written law by:
  - 3.1 Using their knowledge of the craftily worded law to convince you that you aren't "qualified" or justified in interpreting the written laws that don't bind you to pay income taxes.
  - 3.2 Refusing to answer one simple question repeatedly: "What law in the U.S. Codes obligates me as an American living in the 50 Union states liable to pay income tax on income derived from labor or investments in the 50 Union states?"
  - 3.3 Refusing to discuss or share the truth with you about the issues addressed in this document. They do this in violation of the IRS regulations that require them to be responsive and thorough and honest in answering your questions and justifying why you owe tax.
  - 3.4 Deliberately not correcting the errors made by employers in incorrectly declaring wages earned by Americans in the 50 Union states as "gross income".
4. Making the process and complexity of defending oneself against unlawful IRS tactics more costly and inconvenient and exasperating than just paying an unlawful income tax.
5. Using computers to automate the harassment and extortion of taxes not owed out of millions of law-abiding Americans
6. Conspiring to create whatever political emergencies, exigencies, and executive orders they can to convince you that they should be permitted to bypass the constitution, property rights, and due process protections that are the foundation of our republican democracy and liberties. This starts with:
  - 6.1 Maintaining a perpetual federal budget deficit and debt that justifies continuing to pay income taxes.
  - 6.2 Declaring wars and having conflicts that make people feel so threatened that they don't mind paying extra money to the government for "protection". Isn't that what extortionists do? Since the government does this in a cooperative, coordinated, and systematic way, doesn't that make it a conspiracy?
7. "Encrypting" and obfuscating the tax records they maintain on you (Individual Master File, or IMF) with "legalese" and not publishing standards on how to interpret them so that only their own "experts", who are a trusted few that don't publicize their secret or respond to questions, can understand their meaning and reach the conclusion that you owe no tax.
8. Censoring and punishing whistle blowers in violation of the First Amendment to the Constitution by:
  - 8.1 Threatening "political" audits against detractors.
  - 8.2 Threatening contempt sanctions against litigants who insist on talking about the tax code in federal court.
  - 8.3 Writing its rules regarding religious organization tax exemptions so that churches cannot have political opinions or advocate specific parties or candidates who might oppose income taxes.
9. Scheduling regular "tax lynchings" of noted personalities in using biased judges for alleged (but not actual) tax crimes, to keep the rest of us gullible sheep "volunteering" to line up and get fleeced of their hard-earned property and income on an annual basis.
10. Abusing the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) by denying access by Americans to important aspects of their administrative record and IRS Individual Master File (IMF). Forcing Americans to litigate in order to get the information the law entitles them to.
11. Abusing their power illegally to keep this issue out of higher courts to prevent people from finding out that "the emperor has no clothes" on the income tax issue. They do this by the following illegal tactics:
  - 11.1 Bypassing due process protections and effecting unauthorized and illegal tax levies (the law only allows the IRS to levy the accounts of government employees, and not private Americans).
  - 11.2 Confiscating property and records of Americans illegally without due process to build their case and cripple their defense by depriving them of evidence they need to defend themselves.
  - 11.3 Undermining one's ability to litigate by taking all his property BEFORE litigation begins so he can't afford legal representation

- 1 11.4 Holding "kangaroo" tax courts where a bureaucrat judge who is bought and sold by the IRS becomes the judge, the  
2 jury, and the executioner!
- 3 11.5 Intimidating Americans by making the litigation so complex and time consuming that they will want to just give  
4 up and pay the unlawful tax.
- 5 11.6 Using the label of "tax protester" to create a discriminatory environment for Americans who litigate to protect their  
6 constitutional right not to pay federal income taxes. Fortunately, starting in 1998 when the IRS Restructuring and  
7 Reform Act was passed, the use of the term "tax protester" by the IRS was made illegal.

8 This document is a serious and scholarly study into the origins and nature of the constitutional republic of the United States  
9 of America and the foundations for the government's authority to make Americans liable for an income tax. Throughout, we  
10 discuss the cultural and religious beliefs of the noble and honorable Christian men of faith who were our founding fathers in  
11 order to help clarify the reasoning behind why the Constitution was written the way that it was and why the U.S. Supreme  
12 Court ruled the way that it did. We also make use of frequent quotes from the Bible in order to show where their thinking  
13 was derived from. The intent of this is not to denigrate or advantage any particular religious faith, but simply to help you  
14 understand how our culture and our country and our laws evolved to the point that they are today. A large part of  
15 understanding our tax system is understanding the history behind it, including its Christian origins. The ideas we present in  
16 this book are universal and apply to all people and all faiths. While the author (like the founding fathers) is a devoted  
17 Christian, he would never condemn any other person or faith. To the contrary, we believe that:

18 *"Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God."*  
19 *[1 John 4:7, Bible, NKJV]*

20 It is therefore our sincerest desire not to get pious or self-righteous toward any of our readers, many of whom are not  
21 Christians. In the spirit of our Founding Fathers, we will try very hard to objectively apply both God's law and man's law  
22 as the yardstick to determine whether the actions of our government are honorable, justifiable, and in our best interests as the  
23 sovereigns who rule that government. This book was therefore written in the spirit of 1 Corinthians 13:6, which says about  
24 love:

25 *"Love...does not rejoice in iniquity, but **rejoices in TRUTH.**"*

26 **This book is about rejoicing in and understanding the TRUTH about income taxes.** It is about stripping the IRS and your  
27 state taxing authorities completely naked in the room in front of you so you can clearly see every skeleton, every wart,  
28 everything they have been hiding from you through deceit and lies, and every minute detail of what they have been doing  
29 over the years with legislation and their actual behavior to either undermine, or support your rights and your liberties as they  
30 relate to income taxes. This is consistent with the Chinese proverb that says:

31 *You can best judge a man by the work of his hands.*

32 This document shall serve as a "60 Minutes" style documentary on the IRS and income tax scam. Throughout this document,  
33 we will emphasize the following approach toward taxation which is advocated in the Bible:

34 *"Better is a little with righteousness.  
35 Than vast revenues without justice."  
36 [Prov. 16:8, Bible]*

37 *"He who oppresses the poor to increase his riches, and he who gives to the rich, will surely come to poverty."  
38 [Prov. 22:16; Take a look at section 2.12 of the Tax Fraud Prevention Manual to find out how IRS enforcement  
39 focuses mainly on the poor, the married, and the less educated, who are defenseless against greedy slick lawyers  
40 who want to extort their money]*

42 Despite "common knowledge" to the contrary, the earnings of most Americans is not subject to the United States federal  
43 income tax. You will be surprised to find that you were never "liable" to pay the income taxes that you have been paying all  
44 these years. Instead, the strict limits on federal power imposed by the Constitution prohibited Congress from imposing a tax  
45 on the incomes of American Citizens who live and work exclusively within the 50 Union states, and the federal statutes and  
46 regulations demonstrate that Congress **did not** and could not impose such a tax. This was not due to an oversight, or to some  
47 technical imperfection in the legislative process. Congress never even attempted to impose such a tax. Instead, a limited  
48 income tax was imposed, and was worded in such a way that it could easily be misinterpreted, both by the public and tax  
49 professionals, to give the impression that it was applicable to the income of most Americans. The IRS's fraudulent  
50 publications and misapplication of the tax code over the years also contributed to convincing and "training" us to misinterpret

the tax code and unwittingly pay taxes for which we clearly were never liable. This misapplication of the tax code by the average American Citizen was also fostered and encouraged by the fact that most people have never read all 9,500 pages of the Internal Revenue Codes, but instead read and rely only on the incomplete at best and fraudulent at worst IRS publications. And the IRS has been able to get away with this fraud because the federal courts have refused to hold them accountable for what they write in their publications. However, a more in-depth study of the federal tax statutes and accompanying regulations reveals that the tax is far more limited in scope than the public has been deceived into believing.

While following the proof in this book may require concentration, it does *not* require any “leap of faith,” or any questionable “interpretation” of the law, or even a legal background. The legal system of the United States is a system of written law, and the words in the law must clearly inform ordinary individuals of exactly what the law requires. No speculation or interpretation by others should be required. According to the U.S. Supreme Court, we are a government of laws and not of men:

*“The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It will certainly cease to deserve that high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested legal right.”*  
[Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)]

In order to construct a “government of laws and not of men”, the laws must be written clearly and simply so that they can be understood not only by a lawyer or judge, but more importantly by the common man unaided. After all, since it is juries who must apply the law to determine guilt, the common man sitting on them must be able to understand that law unaided or he ceases to be the sovereign who keeps the government in check as juries were intended to do.

*“A statute which either forbids or requires the doing of an act in terms so vague that men and women of common intelligence must necessarily guess at its meaning and differ as to its application, violates the first essential of due process of law.”*  
[Connally v General Const. Co., 269 U.S. 385 (1926)]

To the extent that only lawyers and judges can understand our laws is the extent to which custody of our liberties has been transferred from us and the law to the subjective whims of a ruling class of individuals composed of members of a “priesthood” full of avaricious and egotistical witch doctors called lawyers, politicians, and judges.

Therefore, an accurate determination of what the law requires can be accomplished only by an examination of the relevant clauses of the Constitution, the statutes, and the regulations themselves, without regard for preconceived assumptions about what the law says. If we as common men cannot understand the laws as written, then the bottom line is that they quite frankly must be declared unenforceable and unconstitutional because they do not meet the “void for vagueness” doctrine of the U.S. Supreme Court that you will read about later in section 5.12. Despite the enormous, complex maze of federal statutes and regulations built up by government lawyers and legislators over the years to “protect their turf” and “conceal the truth”, written in what is virtually a foreign language to most (sometimes called “legalese”), the truth is still quite provable, as will be shown throughout the rest of this book. Furthermore, if you are a Christian and you are afraid to read or try to understand the law, then God says you are making a big mistake, so you must learn to overcome your phobia of the law or suffer His wrath and fury eventually:

*“One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination.”*  
[Proverbs 28:9]

*“Those who forsake the law praise the wicked, but such as keep the law contend with them.”*  
[Prov. 28:4, Bible, NKJV]

Though many have complained about and/or resisted the federal income tax, the truth is that most Americans have no reason to “protest” the law at all. The federal income tax is neither invalid nor unconstitutional. The tax complies fully with the strict Constitutional limitations on the power of Congress.

What *does* warrant protest and demand for correction is how the tax has been (and still is) grossly misrepresented to the American people, and illegally misapplied by federal employees in the federal judiciary and the IRS, most of whom are equally ignorant of the truth. Many Americans have been harassed, robbed, and imprisoned unjustly, and the few in government who knew the truth did nothing to stop it because of their covetousness for money. Political power has long been associated with dishonesty and deception, but **the misrepresentation of the federal income tax**

**(referred to below as “the Great Deception” or the “Immaculate Deception”) constitutes the most massive fraud and conspiracy in the history of the United States of America. (It is more a conspiracy of ignorance than a conspiracy of secrecy, meaning that most of those involved in the tax industry, including the IRS and tax professionals, are guilty of incompetence and ignorance, rather than intentional deceit).**

What also warrants protest by every American is the deceptive and unclear way that the laws are described in the Internal Revenue Codes, and especially the way that words are legally defined and used. The tax code is deliberately confusing because of the issues discussed in section 1.9 of the *Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Manual*, Form #10.005 entitled “What would it take for the IRS and the Congress to ‘come clean’”. There is also a lot of inconsistency in the definitions between the Internal Revenue Code, Code of Federal Regulations Title 26, the IRS Publications, and the Internal Revenue Manual (IRM). All of these sources for tax code, procedure, and forms should be completely consistent because right now they definitely are not and this is a source of great confusion to the average American. This situation must be remedied immediately in order to ensure that all Americans can regain their “due process rights” and eliminate the fear, uncertainty, and unpredictability of the way the federal tax codes are implemented by the IRS and the courts.

We predict that there will very likely be many in government who will be embarrassed and feel convicted and even threatened from a legal perspective by the evidence and conclusions in this book. Because they fear being prosecuted for their misdeeds, they are likely to try to discredit and slander our work. They will feel tempted to call the research in this book “frivolous”, criminally negligent, insane, and downright wrong for lack of any other way to rationally refute it point by point. However, you will find that everything in this book and everything we assert on our website is based entirely on accurate, extensively researched law and evidence that you can easily and independently validate for yourself using the Internet. We even show you how to verify every claim we make yourself in chapters 3 and 8 and we encourage you to do so as so many others have. It is precisely this kind of extensive peer review that has caused the quality of this document to improve over time to the point where it is now. We have yet to find one rational, sane person who has looked at the research in this book and identified anything that is incorrect or frivolous. Every person we have encountered to date who has a beef with this document has something to gain by doing so because they either collect a government paycheck or are atheist socialist/communist liberals who want a totalitarian government sugar daddy and false god to worship. We’re glad to see such people are offended, because these are the types who ought to feel convicted and rebuked by this book. Therefore, when you are confronted by slanderous and belligerent government “servants” or socialists who are trying to brainwash and intimidate you with their lies and rhetoric, the best thing to say is what we say below. This message usually scares them so bad we never hear from them again, even though we did want to hear their specific valid concerns about errors in our book:

*“I don’t want to hear any of your verbal abuse, propaganda, or lies. Put your money where your mouth is. Show me any authoritative evidence, law, or court ruling from only the Supreme Court that overrules or conflicts with anything in this book or invalidates any of the main points in chapter 5. I also challenge you to disprove any of the assertions in this book by answering the Tax Deposition Questions on the Family Guardian Website at <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Deposition.htm>. If you can’t refute the evidence and law behind each question, then you have agreed with the conclusions of the book by default. Unless and until you do so, remember that it’s all belligerent, violent name calling and verbal abuse, which makes you a bully and a tyrant. Under those circumstances, your approach, not the book, is frivolous. Also remember that Proverbs 18:13 says: ‘He that answers a matter before he hears it, it is a folly and a shame on him.’ Have you read the questions and at least through Chapter 5 of the book before writing it off as nonsense? Any other approach would be ignorance and folly on your part according to Natural Law. Your unwillingness and complete failure to confront or refute the evidence and the truth is the very definition of ignorance in my book. Now get to work answering the questions and refuting the research and evidence or admit you are wrong and leave me alone.*”

Why haven’t the truths in this book been exposed on a large scale already? We’ll answer that question in great detail in section 1.11.4 but right now, suffice it to say that with the advent of the Internet, technology has now for the first time made it possible for us to read and study and search the “whole law” online from the comfort of their own home and easily and quickly learn enough on their own to understand and interpret the law for themselves and thereby end the tyranny created by the sheer volume of the various federal laws. That is how this document was prepared by the authors. Up until recently, the very latest and up-to-date legislation was difficult to get one’s hands on in a law library and this promoted fear and ignorance by the common man about the law. But now, everyone in our society with a computer and Internet access has the very latest laws and news right up to the minute AT NO COST, so we no longer need to rely on a “priesthood” of lawyers, politicians, and government bureaucrats to be telling us what to do or interpreting the laws for us. Knowledge is power, and organized

1 and useful knowledge of the kind found in this book makes the ultimate weapon against deceitful and covetous government  
2 servants!

3 In a sense, we are entering a renaissance of knowledge in all fields, including law, not unlike back in the first millennium  
4 (1000-1500 A.D.), where there were no printing presses and the printed word, including religious writings like the bible, were  
5 not available to the common man by other than an expensive and time consuming scribe process. This led to a caste society  
6 with no middle class and serfdom to the learned class brought about by ignorance. The advent of the printing press and public  
7 education changed all that and democratized knowledge for everyone. The Internet is doing for our society what the printing  
8 press and Gutenberg Bible did in the 1500's: breaking the tyranny and the priesthood, and the serfdom of ignorance on our  
9 lives! What a wonderful privilege it is to see how this will change the landscape for everyone!

10 Not only can we find the information we want from all over the world instantly, we can also publish our findings GLOBALLY  
11 at virtually NO COST! There is no longer any room for ignorance, privacy, or secrecy in today's society, and that will solve  
12 lots of our problems eventually, if of course we harness and use the power of technology wisely: Not as a means to obsess  
13 over pornography or hack information about people's personal lives, but as a way to empower and educate them. We can  
14 collaborate and help each other in ending the "conspiracy of ignorance" and tyranny created by the obfuscated tax code and  
15 encouraged by the IRS and U.S. Congress. Technology has ensured that legislators and crafty lawyers can no longer hide  
16 their intentions in abstruse and craftily-constructed legalese unavailable to most common men or keep the average American  
17 from knowing what they are up to, and praise the Lord for that!

18 Recall that the American Revolution in 1776 was about revolt against unjust taxation. One of the books that started that  
19 revolution was a famous book by Thomas Paine entitled Common Sense. We would like for you to regard this book as being  
20 in the same league and having the same purpose as that book, because this book is filled with common sense about the issue  
21 of income taxes. It's time for another revolution! Roll up your sleeves and start the revolt. All it will take is about 15% of  
22 Americans making a big stink and being very high maintenance for the IRS and the whole corrupt system will come crashing  
23 down. This book hopefully will give you enough information to make it more expensive for the government to collect the  
24 taxes than the money they take in.

25 All non-italicized comments (in brackets) within a citation in this document are comments of the author, and do not appear  
26 in the text itself. Also, all **bold** and underlined emphasis within citations has been added by the author.

27 (Throughout the document there are several "Questions for Doubters" for tax professionals or others who doubt the  
28 correctness of this document.)

### 29 AND NOW A WORD FROM OUR SPONSOR...GOD HIMSELF

30 Lastly and most importantly, we want you to finish this document with a deep appreciation for the Christian faith and a respect  
31 and reverence for God almighty, who is sovereign, powerful, omnipotent, just, truthful, and merciful. We want to emphasize  
32 that there is a spiritual war here on earth for the souls of men between God and the prince of darkness, death, deceit, and lust,  
33 Satan. You have no choice but to choose sides. You can serve God or you can serve Satan, but you must serve one of the  
34 two, and a failure to decide constitutes a choice for Satan.

35 *"He that is not with **me** is **against me**; and he that gathereth not with **me** scattereth abroad."*

36 *"Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy  
37 [against] the [Holy] Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men."  
38 [Matt. 12:30-31, Bible, NKJV]*

40 *"I know not your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot.*

41 *So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.*

42 *Because you say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing—and do not know that you are  
43 wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked—*

44 *I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in the fire, that you may be rich; and white garments, that you may be  
45 clothed, that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may  
46 see.*

1 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent.

2  
3 Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and  
4 dine with him, and he with Me.

5  
6 To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father  
7 on His throne.

8 [Revelation 3:15-21, Bible, NKJV]

9 If you choose God, then you are a free man and a sovereign member of the heavenly Republic who has escaped slavery to sin  
10 and ignorance and who will have a seat on the throne at the right hand of God Himself. You will have the wisest and most  
11 powerful ally by your side to fight evil whenever you pray for His help. If you don't choose, or you choose Satan or your  
12 own worldly gods (government, money, sex, power, hedonism, sin, etc), then you will continue to be slaves of our deceitful  
13 government as God's punishment for idolatry and sin. We love the Lord Jesus Christ and we wrote this book to encourage  
14 you to have a personal relationship with Him. We want you to experience the rich joy of salvation, forgiveness, and wisdom  
15 that can only come from intimacy with your Creator, like our brilliant founding fathers did.

### 16 DRINKING FROM MY SAUCER

17  
18 I've never made a fortune and it's probably too late now.  
19 But I don't worry about that much, I'm happy anyhow.  
20 And as I go along life's way, I'm reaping better than I sowed.  
21 I'm drinking from my saucer, 'Cause my cup has overflowed.

22  
23 Haven't got a lot of riches, and sometimes the going's tough.  
24 But I've got loving ones around me, and that makes me rich enough.  
25 I thank God for His blessings, and the mercies He's bestowed.  
26 I'm drinking from my saucer, 'cause my cup has overflowed.

27  
28 O, Remember times when things went wrong, My faith wore somewhat thin.  
29 But all at once the dark clouds broke, and sun peeped through again.  
30 So Lord, help me not to gripe about the tough rows that I've hoed.  
31 I'm drinking from my saucer, 'Cause my cup has overflowed.

32  
33 If God gives me strength and courage, when the way grows steep and rough.  
34 I'll not ask for other blessings, I'm already blessed enough.  
35 And may I never be too busy, to help others bear their loads.  
36 Then I'll keep drinking from my saucer, 'Cause my cup has overflowed.

37  
38 A LITTLE SMILE FOR YOU  
39 to brighten your day.  
40 God Bless you!

41 Godliness with contentment is great gain! Below is the opposite that awaits you if you don't choose God:

42 "Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds [who work for the IRS and the government and the legal  
43 profession], and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself.

44 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

45 For we brought nothing into [this] world, [and it is] certain we can carry nothing out.

46 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

47 But they that will be rich [at the IRS] fall into temptation and a snare, and [into] many foolish and hurtful lusts,  
48 which drown men in destruction and perdition.

49 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and  
50 pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

51 But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience,  
52 meekness.

53 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good  
54 profession before many witnesses."  
55 [1 Timothy 6:5-12, Bible, NKJV]

Your salvation and that of your loved ones is far more important to us than any amount of money you might ever save on your taxes, my friend! You will have missed the most valuable and important lesson and message of this book if you neglect your own salvation after learning the profound truths exposed here.

*“For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? “*  
*[Mark 8:36]*

If you want to accept Jesus into your heart for the first time, then please give us a call and we will pray with you and for you! There is still hope for this lost world, but fixing it can only happen one soul at a time.

### 1.3 Who Is This Document Intended To Help?

This document is intended to help the following classes of individuals:

1. PRIVATE workers of PRIVATE companies.
2. Self-supporting people.
3. Business owners.
4. Government employees (see section 5.7: Considerations Involving Government Employees).
5. Consultants.
6. Contractors.

### 1.4 Why Should I Believe This Book or Your Website?

Some of our readers pick up this book for the first time and notice that the views expressed in it are so different from mainstream America and so different from what they have been taught in the public schools that they erroneously conclude that this book must be wrong. But we must remember that God’s views are very different from the world’s views—they are foreign to nonbelievers:

*“And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.”*  
*[Romans 12:2, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.”*  
*[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]*

Why should you believe anything we are telling you or anything in this book? No doubt, there are a lot of tax scams and money scams out there that have victimized many, and it is our firmest desire that none of the information in this book should ever be described with such words. Why shouldn’t you view this book as just another tax scam and the author as another purveyor of snake oil? These are question we sometimes get from our readers, and it’s the very same question we encourage our readers frequently to be asking their government, the legal profession, and the IRS about their publications, forms, arguments, and skewed propaganda:

**ALWAYS QUESTION AUTHORITY!!!**

Therefore, before we proceed further with our book, let us give you some background about us to prove to you that everything we are saying in this book is the absolute and authoritative truth. Someone once said:

*“Never believe anyone who says ‘Trust me!’ or ‘Believe me!’”.*

This is a contemporary version of Jesus’ own words, when He said:

*“If I bear witness of Myself, My witness is not true.”*  
*[John 5:31, Bible, NKJV]*

We use this saying often ourselves. You will therefore never hear us say this. Instead, we will explain in excruciating detail the well-researched factual and legal basis of every conclusion and assertion we make in this book, and we will always try to rely on outside sources who are as unbiased as possible as the basis for our conclusions. We will use the words right out of the mouth of the government’s own servants in most cases to show beyond any doubt that what we are telling you is true.

We will also cite scripture where appropriate to back up our facts and conclusions, because in the final analysis, God is the ultimate and only source of Truth. We will show you by our example and what we are actually doing in our own dealings with the IRS that everything we say is true. This is the only way you will believe us anyway, in the final analysis, and the Bible confirms this:

*"Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs or thistles?"*

*Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.*

*A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither [can] a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.*

*Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.*

*Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them."*

*[Matt. 7:16-20]*

### 1.4.1 Mission Statement

This document and the Family Guardian website it was downloaded from exist as:

1. A legal education and law enforcement group focusing on both God's Laws and man's laws.
2. A free public service.
3. A nonprofit, nondenominational Christian (religious) ministry.
4. A religious fellowship in the church of the Lord Jesus Christ.
5. A religious charity
6. A First Amendment association of activists who are dedicated to political reform of our tax and legal systems
7. A whistle blowing group focused on researching, exposing, publicizing, and punishing government deception and corruption wherever it may be found, and especially in regards to matters relating law, commerce, and taxation. This is a fundamental requirement of the Bible, which says that:
  - 7.1. "Fearing the Lord" is the essence of our faith. See [Deut. 6:13, 24](#); [Deut. 10:20](#)
  - 7.2. To "fear the Lord" is to "hate evil". See [Prov. 8:13](#).
  - 7.3. Hating evil is the way we love and protect our neighbor, in fulfillment of the last six commandments of the ten commandments.
  - 7.4. Whistle blowing relating to evil in our government is therefore a protected First Amendment religious practice. See the following for details: <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Articles/HATEPub-040513.pdf>

*"In the First Amendment, the Founding Fathers gave the free press the protection it must have to fulfill its essential role in our democracy. The press [and this religious ministry] was to serve the governed, not the governors. The Government's power to censor the press was abolished so that the press would remain forever free to censure the Government. The press was protected so that it could bare the secrets of government and inform the people. Only a free and unrestrained press can effectively expose deception in government. And paramount among the responsibilities of a free press is the duty to prevent any part of the government from deceiving the people and sending them off to distant lands to die of foreign fevers and foreign shot and shell. In my view, far from deserving condemnation for their courageous reporting, the New York Times, the Washington Post, and other newspapers should be commended for serving the purpose that the Founding Fathers saw so clearly. In revealing the workings of government that led to the Vietnam war, the newspapers nobly did precisely that which the Founders hoped and trusted they would do."*

*[New York Times Co. v. United States, 403 U.S. 713 (1970)]*

We view "evil" as simply the absence of truth. We seek to displace and eliminate evil by enlightening the world with Truth, which God is the embodiment of.

*"Evil is simply the absence of truth."*

*[M. Scott Peck; [The Road Less Traveled](#)]*

*"Sanctify them by Your truth. Your [God's] word is truth."*

*[[John 17:17](#), Bible, NKJV]*

*"The entirety of Your word is truth, And every one of Your righteous judgments endures forever."*

*[[Psalm 119:160](#), Bible, NKJV]*

*"Your righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, And Your law is truth."*



1            [\[Psalm 119:142, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

2 We are not "tax protesters", "tax defiers", or "tax deniers". As a matter of fact, you can't even become a [Member](#) of our  
3 ministry if you fit this description. We do not challenge the lawfulness or Constitutionality of any part of the [Internal Revenue](#)  
4 [Code](#) or any state revenue code and we believe that these codes are completely Constitutional as written. HOWEVER, we  
5 also believe that the way they are willfully MISREPRESENTED to the American public, and the way they are  
6 MALADMINISTERED by the IRS and state revenue agencies are willfully and maliciously deceptive and in many cases  
7 grossly illegal and injurious. If these revenue codes were truthfully represented and faithfully administered completely  
8 consistent with what they say and more importantly, their legislative intent and the Constitution, then we believe that there  
9 would be almost NO "[taxpayers](#)". The only reason there are "[taxpayers](#)", is because most Americans have been maliciously  
10 and deliberately deceived by public servants about their true nature and the very limited audience of people who are their  
11 only proper subject. Our enemy is not the government or the IRS or even taxes, but instead is:

- 12 1. Legal ignorance on the part of Americans that allows public servants to abuse their authority and violate the law. We  
13 have met the enemy, and it is our own ignorance of the law.

14            *"One who turns his ear from hearing the law [God's law or man's law], even his prayer is an abomination."*  
15            [\[Prov. 28:9, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

16            *"But this crowd that does not know [and quote and follow and use] the law is accursed."*  
17            [\[John 7:49, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

18            *"Salvation is far from the wicked, For they do not seek Your statutes."*  
19            [\[Psalm 119:155, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

20            *"Every man is supposed to know the law. A party who makes a contract [or enters into a [franchise](#), which is also  
21 a contract] with an officer [of the government] without having it reduced to writing is knowingly accessory to a  
22 violation of duty on his part. Such a party aids in the violation of the law."  
23 [\[Clark v. United States, 95 U.S. 539 \(1877\)\]](#)*

- 24 2. The abuse of [presumption](#) to injure the rights of sovereign Americans, in violation of due process of law and God's law  
25 found in [Numbers 15:30](#) (NKJV). Much of this presumption is compelled by the government by willfully dumbing-  
26 down the average Americans about legal subjects in the public (government) schools. This makes the legal profession  
27 into essentially a "priesthood" and a pagan "religion" that the average American blindly worships and obeys, without  
28 ever questioning authority. It is a supreme injustice to proceed against a person without every conclusion being based  
29 ONLY on fact and not presumption, opinion, or belief.

30            *"But the person who does anything presumptuously, whether he is native-born or a stranger, that one brings  
31 reproach on the LORD, and he shall be cut off from among his people."  
32 [\[Numbers 15:30, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

34            *"Due Process: [ . . . ] If any question of fact or liability be conclusively be presumed [rather than proven with  
35 evidence] against him, this is not due process of law."  
36 [\[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 500\]](#)*

38            *(1) [8:4993] **Conclusive presumptions affecting protected interests:** A conclusive presumption may be defeated  
39 where its application would impair a party's constitutionally-protected liberty or property interests. In such  
40 cases, conclusive presumptions have been held to violate a party's due process and equal protection  
41 rights. [\[Vlandis v. Kline \(1973\) 412 U.S. 441, 449, 93 S.Ct. 2230, 2235; Cleveland Bd. of Ed. v. LaFleur \(1974\)](#)  
42 [414 U.S. 632, 639-640, 94 S.Ct. 1208, 1215-presumption under Illinois law that unmarried fathers are unfit](#)  
43 [violates process\]](#)  
44            [\[Federal Civil Trials and Evidence \(2005\), Rutter Group, paragraph 8:4993, p. 8K-34\]](#)*

45 See the following for a detailed article on this scam and sin:

[Presumption: Chief Weapon for Unlawfully Enlarging Federal Jurisdiction](#), Form #05.017  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

- 46 3. Public servants deceiving the public by portraying "Private Law" as "Public Law". Click on the link below for an  
47 article on this subject:

[Requirement for Consent](#), Form #05.003  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

4. Public servants refusing to acknowledge the requirement for consent in all human interactions. Click on the link below for an article on this subject:

Requirement for Consent, Form #05.003  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

5. Willful omissions from the IRS website and publications that keep the public from hearing the whole truth. The problem is not what these sources say, but what they DON'T say. The [Great IRS Hoax](#) contains over 2,000 pages of facts that neither the IRS nor any one in government is willing to reveal to you because it would destroy the gravy train of plunder that pays their bloated salaries and fat retirement in violation of [18 U.S.C. §208](#).
6. The use of "words of art" to deceive the people in both government publications and the law itself. Click on the link below for examples:  
<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/FormsInstr-Cites.htm>
7. The lack of "equal protection of the law" in courts of justice relating to the statements and actions of public servants, whereby the IRS doesn't have to assume responsibility for its statements and actions, and yet persons who fill out tax forms can be thrown in jail and prosecuted for fraud if they emulate the IRS by being just as careless. This also includes "selective enforcement", where the DOJ positively refuses to prosecute submitters of [false information returns](#) but spends a disproportionate share of its resources prosecuting false income tax returns. They do this because they are more interested in STEALING your money than in justice. See:
- 7.1. Federal Courts and IRS' Own IRM Say NOT RESPONSIBLE for its actions or its words or following its own internal procedures  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>
- 7.2. Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 7.3. Government Establishment of Religion, Form #05.038 -how government establishes itself as a pagan deity and a religion by using franchises to systematically destroy the separation of powers and the requirement for equal protection  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
8. Abuses of franchises that undermine the protection of private rights by the government and the courts:
- 8.1. Enforcing federal franchises in States of the Union, which are outside the civil jurisdiction or police powers of the federal government and result in a destruction of the separation of powers.
- 8.2. Enforcing franchises, such as a "[trade or business](#)" without requiring explicit written consent in some form, such as the issuance and voluntary signing of an application for a license.
- 8.3. Attorney licensing, which destroys the integrity of the legal profession in its role as a check and balance when the government or especially the judiciary becomes corrupt, as it is now.
- 8.4. Abuse of the federal income tax system, which is a franchise and an excise, to bribe states of the Union to give up their sovereignty, act like federal "States" and territories, and accept what amounts to federal bribes to disrespect the rights or those under their care and protection.

See the following for details on the above abuses:

Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

9. Efforts to destroy the separation of powers that is the main protection for our liberties. This results in abuses of the Court system for political, rather than legal, purposes (politicization of the courts). All of the federal courts we have now are Article IV, territorial courts that are part of the Legislative, rather than Judicial Branch of the government. As such, there is no separation of powers and nothing but tyranny can result. See the following for proof of this destruction:
- 9.1. Government Conspiracy to Destroy the Separation of Powers, Form #05.023- shows how lying, thieving public servants have systematically destroyed the separation of powers since the founding of this country  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 9.2. What Happened to Justice?, Form #06.012 -book which proves that we have no Judicial Branch within the federal government, and that all the existing federal courts are acting in an Article IV territorial capacity as part of the Legislative, rather than Judicial, branch of the government.  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 9.3. How Scoundrels Corrupted our Republican Form of Government, Family Guardian Fellowship-brief overview of how the separation of powers has been systematically destroyed  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>
10. The abuse of the government's power to tax in order to transfer wealth between private individuals, which makes the government into a thief and a Robinhood. This includes:
- 10.1. Enforcing the tax laws against other than "public officers" of the government. See:

[Why Your Government is Either a Thief or You are a "Public Officer" for Income Tax Purposes](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #05.008  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

10.2. Offering government "benefits" of any kind to anyone who does not ALREADY work for the government. See:

[The Government "Benefits" Scam](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #05.040  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

11. Corruption of our monetary system that allows the government to:

- 11.1. Counterfeit while denying to all others the right, thus creating an unconstitutional "Title of Nobility" for itself and making itself into a pagan deity, and denying the equal protection to all that is the foundation of the Constitution.
- 11.2. STEAL from the American people by diluting the value of money already into circulation.
- 11.3. Exercise undue control banks and financial institutions that causes them to effectively become federal employment recruiters for the federal government by compelling use of government identifying numbers for those pursuing accounts or loans.

See the following for details on the above SCAMS:

[The Money Scam](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #05.041  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

The link below succinctly summarizes our view of government and taxation and its proper relationship to our religious faith as Christians.

[Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #13.007  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

Our materials are a labor of love undertaken in the spirit of [Isaiah 58](#), [Matt. 22:39](#), [James 2:8](#), [Matt. 7:12](#), and [Exodus 20:12-17](#), which collectively command us to love and help and serve and protect our neighbor, and this includes our fellow Americans. It represents the collective work and contributions of the author and many very fine and generous and spiritual people who have graciously donated their materials and work and time to us over the years. The most important contributor to our materials is God Himself, who inspired and lead and facilitated *everything* on this website through His Holy Spirit. It has been an honor to serve and glorify Him in the process of compiling and publishing the materials here and we hope He will bless you and encourage you through our efforts as His bondservant and fiduciary.

We are not a "business" or an "organization", but instead we are a "virtual assembly" and a "[virtual church](#)" of people who use the internet to collaborate and help each other to learn about [God's law](#) and [man's law](#).

*"We have the gift of an inner liberty so far-reaching that we can choose either to accept or reject the God who gave it to us, and it would seem to follow that the Author of a liberty so radical wills that we should be equally free in our relationships with other men. Spiritual liberty logically demands conditions of outer and social freedom for its completion."  
 [Edmund A. Opitz]*

*"The heart of the righteous studies how to answer, But the mouth of the wicked pours forth evil."  
 [Prov. 15:28, Bible, NKJV]*

Our goal is to apply what we learn about law to do as [Isaiah 58](#) requires: worship and glorify God by serving and protecting and liberating Americans everywhere from corrupt and illegal and unconstitutional abuses by their state and federal government and their fellow Americans:

*"Is this not the fast that I have chosen:  
 To loose the bonds of wickedness,  
 To undo the heavy burdens,  
 To let the oppressed go free,  
 And that you break every yoke?"  
 [Isaiah 58:6, Bible, NKJV]*

We want to emancipate all the slaves of sin, the government, the legal profession, and debt and thereby revitalize and restore our Constitutional Republic to the greatness and glory and righteousness it once so nobly enjoyed. This cause is similar to that of Jesus, who came down to earth on a mission from God to set man free from slavery to sin ([John 8:31-36](#)). We solicit your dedicated and courageous help in this endeavor, because *together* and with a righteous cause on our side, we stand a much better chance of success:

1 "A wise man is strong,  
2 Yes, a man of knowledge increases strength;  
3 For by wise counsel you will wage your own war,  
4 And in a multitude of counselors there is safety."  
5 [[Prov. 24:6](#), Bible, NKJV]

6 "Where there is no counsel, the people fall;  
7 But in a multitude of counselors, there is safety."  
8 [[Prov. 11:14](#), Bible, NKJV]

9 "One man with courage is a majority."  
10 [President Andrew Jackson]

11 This "virtual assembly" and "[virtual church](#)" is protected from federal persecution by the [First Amendment](#) Assembly clause  
12 and from state persecution by the [Fourteenth Amendment](#) to the [U.S. Constitution](#). It is also protected by God Himself:

13 "But You, O LORD, are a **shield** for me, My glory and the One who lifts up my head."  
14 [[Psalm 3:3](#), Bible, NKJV]

15 "The LORD is my rock and my fortress and my deliverer; My God, my strength, in whom I will trust; My **shield**  
16 and the horn of my salvation, my stronghold."  
17 [[Psalm 18:2](#), Bible, NKJV]

18 We and the people associated with this "virtual assembly" and "virtual church" do not intend to be "leaders" of the tax honesty  
19 community in any sense of the word. We are simply God's servants and we are here to promote His sovereignty over the  
20 affairs of men. The Bible says that "*whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant*" ([Matt. 20:26](#),  
21 Bible, NKJV), and that is exactly what we seek to be: servants. This is the same requirement that our Constitution imposes  
22 on those who work in our government, which is that they be servants of the sovereign people, but they defiantly refuse to  
23 assume this role and instead have usurped authority to become tyrannical Masters. We are here to help and serve and protect  
24 our fellow man, and not to pad our pockets, ingratiate ourselves with vain flattery, or make ourselves look better than others  
25 by criticizing and denigrating others. We are here to do God's will on Earth, and not our own:

26 "I can of Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because **I do not seek My own**  
27 **will, but the will of the Father who sent Me.**"  
28 [[John 5:30](#), Bible, NKJV]

29 "Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless **not My will, but Yours, be done.**"  
30 [[Luke 22:42](#), Bible, NKJV]

31 "Except the LORD [and not us] build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city,  
32 the watchman waketh but in vain."  
33 [[Psalm 127:1](#), Bible, NKJV]

34 Because we gather evidence of and attempt to remedy wrongs instituted by the government against its citizens, this website  
35 is also protected by the First Amendment Petition For Redress of Grievances clause. We are also protected by witness  
36 tampering and obstruction of justice laws such as [18 U.S.C. §§1510, 1512, 1513](#). The reason this "virtual assembly" of people  
37 is so desperately needed is because government servants on a large scale have violated their [fiduciary duty](#) and perjured their  
38 [oath](#) to support and defend and protect the [Constitution](#) and the American people, which is the only legitimate function and  
39 purpose of government. Usurpers in the state and federal governments have instead chosen to commit war and treason against  
40 their own constituents by illegally abusing their power to turn our [Constitutional Republic](#) into a [totalitarian socialist](#)  
41 [democracy/mobocracy](#) that [plunders](#) the rich to give to the poor and which has thus become a [false god](#) and an idol to most  
42 Americans:

43 "It must be conceded that there are rights in every free government beyond the control of the State [or a covetous  
44 jury or majority of electors]. **A government which recognized no such rights, which held the lives, liberty and**  
45 **property of its citizens, subject at all times to the disposition and unlimited control of even the most democratic**  
46 **depository of power, is after all a despotism. It is true that it is a despotism of the many--of the majority, if you**  
47 **choose to call it so--but it is not the less a despotism.**"  
48 [[Loan Ass'n v. Topeka](#), [87 U.S. \(20 Wall.\) 655](#), 665 (1874)]

49 The focus of this website is therefore to oppose such covetousness, idolatry (Col. 3:5), sin and abuse of the political process  
50 by evangelizing, protecting, emancipating, strengthening, stabilizing, and empowering American families and individuals  
51 through the following lawful means:

**The Great  IRS Hoax: Why We Don't Owe Income Tax, version 4.54**

**TOP SECRET: For Official Treasury/IRS Use Only (FOUO)**

Copyright Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

1. Christian [spiritual development](#)/awakening
2. Church and [family ministry](#) involvement
3. [Education](#) ([legal](#), [political](#), [wisdom](#), [history](#), [parenting](#), [family](#), and [current affairs](#))
4. Empowerment, by:
  - 4.1. Spreading the truth and "the rest of the story" not told by the media
  - 4.2. [Active participation](#) in the [election process](#) (see <http://www.vote-smart.org>)
  - 4.3. Promoting [personal liberties](#) (not freedom, but liberty, which is freedom with personal responsibility for one's actions)
  - 4.4. Ending slavery to sin, including drugs, [pornography](#), [sex](#), television, violence, etc
  - 4.5. [Personal relationship with Jesus Christ](#)
5. Elimination of government tyranny, oppression, and invasion of privacy.. mostly through advocating:
  - 5.1. Elimination of:
    - 5.1.1. [Income taxation](#) (unconstitutional)
    - 5.1.2. [Asset forfeiture laws](#) (and especially those relating to drug trafficking, although we do not approve of drugs)
    - 5.1.3. Compelled participation in Social Security
    - 5.1.4. Being [compelled to obtain and use Social Security Numbers](#) (Socialist Security Numbers)
    - 5.1.5. Public debt. Passing a balanced budget amendment and forcing fiscal responsibility upon national politicians
6. Standing for what is right in the areas of:
  - 6.1. Abortion (I'm [Pro-Life](#))
  - 6.2. [Human cloning](#)
  - 6.3. [Eliminating gun controls](#) (guns don't cause violence, bad gun owners do, and they should go to jail)
  - 6.4. Eliminating [media](#) censorship and bias
  - 6.5. Personal [liberty](#)
7. [Legal activism](#) (when necessary to secure the above goals)
8. [Political activism](#) (always necessary to secure the above goals and maintain past gains)

Why do we put so much energy into this website for free and for your benefit and God's glory? [Click here and listen to a song that explains why!](#) (MS Media Player required)

*"Pride makes us do things **well**, but the love of God and our neighbor makes us do them to **perfection**."*  
[Family Guardian Fellowship]

We are not lawyers or attorneys nor do we render legal advice. [The Bible](#) has nothing but [contemptuous things](#) to say about lawyers, and we wouldn't ever enter into that profession for fear of incurring the wrath of God.

The [Thirteen Testaments of Truth, Christopher Holloman Hansen](#) completely and succinctly describe our approach towards government, politics, and taxes.

The following **EXCELLENT** animation describes in very simple terms our attitude about [freedom, liberty, and sovereignty](#):

*[The Philosophy of Liberty](#) - requires the [Macromedia Flash Player](#) and sound*

We seek to be self-governing men and women under God who are liberated from slavery to sin and government. We are not anti-government or anarchists, because we know that governments and laws were created to keep the "low and lawless forms of humanity" from doing violence to all, including themselves. We instead seek a *small* and very *limited* government that stays within the boundaries put around it by our Constitution and the [separation of powers doctrine](#) so that our liberties and freedoms are not oppressed or encroached by covetous politicians or a greedy majority ("mob") of socialist voters looking for a free government handout.

We are not against paying "[taxes](#)" as they are legally defined. In fact, the Bible says we should pay taxes to whom they are due:

*"Therefore you must be subject, not only because of wrath but also for conscience' sake. For because of this you also pay taxes, for they are God's ministers attending continually to this very thing. **Render therefore to all their due: taxes to whom taxes are due, customs to whom customs, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.**"*  
[Rom. 13:5-7, Bible, NKJV. Incidentally, the "governing authorities" in this passage are the "sovereigns", who in this country are the People and not their servants working in government. See section 4.1 later for details.]

HOWEVER, what we pay under Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue are not "[taxes](#)", because:

**The Great  IRS Hoax: Why We Don't Owe Income Tax, version 4.54**

**TOP SECRET:** For Official Treasury/IRS Use Only (FOUO)

Copyright Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

1. The money we pay doesn't support only the government, as the Supreme Court said they must in [Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall 655 \(1874\)](#).

*"To lay, with one hand, the power of the government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it upon favored individuals to aid private enterprises and build up private fortunes, is none the less a robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.*

*Nor is it taxation. 'A tax,' says Webster's Dictionary, 'is a rate or sum of money assessed on the person or property of a citizen by government for the use of the nation or State.' 'Taxes are burdens or charges imposed by the Legislature upon persons or property to raise money for public purposes.' Cooley, Const. Lim., 479.* [[Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 \(1874\)](#) ]

2. Feeble attempts by the IRS to make "[taxpayers](#)" into federal government "[employees](#)" using the W-4, SSNs, and the deceptive use of the word "[trade or business](#)" amount to constructive fraud and do not satisfy the requirement that "taxes" in deed and in fact support only the government.
3. The Internal Revenue Code is not positive law but religion. It is public policy and political religion deceitfully and cleverly disguised by covetous public servants to "look" like law. Law is the only evidence that the people consented to enforcement actions by their government. There is no evidence of consent to unapportioned direct taxation of property or individuals within states of the Union either in the Constitution or in any act of Congress that implements it.

*"... [the 16th Amendment] conferred no new power of taxation... [and]... prohibited the ... power of income taxation possessed by Congress from the beginning from being taken out of the category of indirect taxation to which it inherently belonged..."* [[Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co., 240 U.S. 103 \(1916\)](#)]

Absent explicit consent, all enforcement actions are unjust because the [Declaration of Independence](#) says all just powers of government derive from the consent of the governed. Anything not consensual is, ipso facto unjust. Without enacted positive law to enforce, the government is simply enforcing a religion, which we call the "civil religion of socialism", in stark violation of the First Amendment. The tax "codes" (not "laws", but "codes") we have now are nothing more than mob rule cleverly disguised as law. It is a decree under legislative forms, but not law, as the U.S. Supreme Court said above.

Any revenues that our government collects under the guise of "[taxes](#)" which is paid to private parties, either to the Federal Reserve or to entitlement program beneficiaries cannot be called "[taxes](#)", and more properly is called "robbery in the name of taxation" by the U.S. Supreme Court in [Loan Association v. Topeka](#). What our deceitful government calls "[taxes](#)" can only truthfully be called "donations" and calling them anything else amounts to constructive [fraud](#). We believe that our tax system should never be abused to promote either wealth transfer or to further the ends of socialism, because [socialism](#) ultimately leads to communism. Below is a presentation that thoroughly explains why the monies we presently pay to the government are not only paid illegally and unconstitutionally, but also are paid in violation of the Bible:

[What Pastors and Clergy Need to Know About Government and Taxation](#), Form #12.006  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

Both the Supreme Court in Proprietors of Charles River Bridge v. Proprietors of Warren Bridge, [36 U.S. 420](#) (1837) and the U.S. Code in [28 U.S.C. §3002](#)(15)(A) admit that all governments are "corporations" and therefore for-profit businesses. We believe that government should therefore be run like any other capitalist business and that they should strictly obey their corporate charter, the United States Constitution. All the patriot rhetoric you read on the internet about freedom, taxation, and sovereignty really boils down to this one important issue. The product government "sells" to the public is "protection", and like any other business, it cannot and should not be allowed to FORCE people to buy its product. Government should also not be able to criminalize non-payment for its services in the form of "taxes", since no other business can. To do otherwise is to:

1. Interfere with our sovereign right to contract or not contract as we see fit. This is a protected right under Article 1, Section 10 of the Constitution.
2. Deprive "taxpayers" of equal protection.
3. Encourage an irresponsible government that is not completely and directly accountable to the people.

The purpose of taxation is to fund the institutionalized process of providing "protection". Like any other business, we believe that people should always have the right to only pay government for what they individually want and need and have contracted in writing to receive, including in the area of "protection". At the same time, the protection services they do use from the government should always be paid for in full and refusal to pay should be nothing more than a civil matter to be handled in civil court as a matter of contract, and not right. If the government receives more money than it needs to deliver only the services demanded in writing by the citizen, then it should reduce the tax rate and refund the money. Every government service should have a price tag and people should sign up for what they want and need and pay only for that and nothing more. If they don't have children, for instance, then the public school assessment should be deducted from their property tax bill.

The means of contracting with government to provide "protection" occurs when one defines their [domicile](#) on a government form to be within the jurisdiction of a specific government. Those who are party to such a contract are called "[taxpayers](#)", "citizens", "inhabitants" and "residents", all of whom have selected a "permanent abode" and therefore committed to a continuing or indefinite relationship of mutual support and allegiance between them and the government. Those who are not party to this contract are called "transient foreigners". That process of contractual consent must be voluntary and fully informed. The right and requirement for an person to contractually consent in writing to government protection also implies the right to NOT consent, which means that if we don't contract with the government to provide protection because we think their form of protection is actually harmful, then we cease to have the duty to pay taxes to support the protection that we don't want. This is the very foundation of all free governments: Consent of the governed. To approach the protection issue any other way is to sanction compelled association in violation of the First Amendment to the corporate charter called the United States Constitution. See the article below which very clearly explains this:

*Why Domicile and Becoming a "Taxpayer" Require Your Consent*, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/DomicileBasisForTaxation.htm>

Like our founding fathers (see Federalist Paper #10), we also oppose pure [democracy](#), and instead endorse a "[republican form of government](#)", whereby the will of the majority during elections is strictly limited by a Bill of Rights that sets boundaries on what the majority can impose on the minority. Below is what our Founding Father said on this subject as part of [Federalist Paper #10](#):

*If a faction consists of less than a majority, relief is supplied by the republican principle, which enables the majority to defeat its sinister views by regular vote. It may clog the administration, it may convulse the society; but it will be unable to execute and mask its violence under the forms of the [Constitution](#). When a majority is included in a faction, the form of popular government, on the other hand, enables it to sacrifice to its ruling passion or interest both the public good and the rights of other citizens. **To secure the public good and private rights against the danger of such a faction, and at the same time to preserve the spirit and the form of popular government, is then the great object to which our inquiries are directed. Let me add that it is the great desideratum by which this form of government can be rescued from the opprobrium under which it has so long labored, and be recommended to the esteem and adoption of mankind.***

*By what means is this object attainable? Evidently by one of two only. Either the existence of the same passion or interest in a majority at the same time must be prevented, or the majority, having such coexistent passion or interest, must be rendered, by their number and local situation, unable to concert and carry into effect schemes of oppression. If the impulse and the opportunity be suffered to coincide, we well know that neither moral nor religious motives can be relied on as an adequate control. They are not found to be such on the injustice and violence of individuals, and lose their efficacy in proportion to the number combined together, that is, in proportion as their efficacy becomes needful.*

*From this view of the subject it may be concluded that a pure democracy, by which I mean a society consisting of a small number of citizens, who assemble and administer the government in person, can admit of no cure for the mischiefs of faction. A common passion or interest will, in almost every case, be felt by a majority of the whole; a communication and concert result from the form of government itself; and there is nothing to check the inducements to sacrifice the weaker party or an obnoxious individual. **Hence it is that such democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found incompatible with personal security or the rights of property; and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths. Theoretic politicians, who have patronized this species of government, have erroneously supposed that by reducing mankind to a perfect equality in their political rights, they would, at the same time, be perfectly equalized and assimilated in their possessions, their opinions, and their passions.***

***A republic, by which I mean a government in which the scheme of representation takes place, opens a different prospect, and promises the cure for which we are seeking.** Let us examine the points in which it varies from pure democracy, and we shall comprehend both the nature of the cure and the efficacy which it must derive from the Union.*

The two great points of difference between a democracy and a republic are: first, the delegation of the government, in the latter, to a small number of citizens elected by the rest; secondly, the greater number of citizens, and greater sphere of country, over which the latter may be extended.

The chief weaknesses of democracy that Madison predicted and explained above were insightfully summarized below:

"A Democracy cannot exist as a permanent form of government. It can only exist until the voters discover that they can vote themselves largesse from the public treasury [socialism]. From that moment on the majority always vote for the candidates promising the most benefits from the public treasury, with the result that a Democracy always collapses over loose fiscal policy, always followed by a dictatorship. The average age of the world's greatest civilizations has been two hundred years. These nations have progressed through this sequence: From bondage to spiritual faith; from spiritual faith to great courage; from courage to liberty; from liberty to abundance; from abundance to selfishness; from selfishness to complacency; from complacency to apathy; from apathy to dependence; from dependency back again into bondage."  
[Alexander Fraser Tytler]

Congressman Ron Paul also demonstrated how this deficient democratic political model has corrupted and will eventually destroy our once great Republic in his wonderful article below

[Sorry Mr. Franklin, We're All Democrats Now, Ron Paul](http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Politics/Articles/RonPaul-030129.htm)  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Politics/Articles/RonPaul-030129.htm>

[The predictable and steady erosion we have seen in our country over the last 50 years](#) has been a direct result of the excesses of a totalitarian democratic system, which has steadily undermined and encroached upon the role of the Bill of Rights and the Separation of Powers Doctrine in the protection of our liberties and God-given rights.

"The very purpose of a Bill of Rights was to withdraw certain subjects from the vicissitudes of political controversy, to place them beyond the reach of majorities and officials and to establish them as legal principles to be applied by the courts. One's right to life, liberty, and property, to free speech, a free press, freedom of worship and assembly, and other fundamental rights may not be submitted to vote; they depend on the outcome of no elections."  
[West Virginia Bd. of Ed. v. Barnett, 319 U.S. 624, 638 (1943)]

We do not advocate [violence](#) or [terrorism](#) or threats or unlawful activity of any kind against anyone, and especially by our government. The focus of this website is to promote the **lawful** and **Constitutional** administration of our country's tax and legal systems and to discourage [unlawful](#) activities of every kind, mostly by the government. This is exactly the same goal that the IRS at least "says" they have, and so you could say we are trying to help the IRS do its job at no cost or obligation to them:

"Provide America's taxpayers top quality service by helping them understand and meet their tax responsibilities and by **applying the tax law with integrity and fairness to all.**"  
[Internal Revenue Manual (I.R.M.), Section 1.1.1.1]

You can't "apply the tax law with integrity" until you *know* and are willing to talk about the law, and that is the competency that almost no IRS employees we have ever met are skilled in, so we are trying to help this process by accelerating the legal education of IRS employees and the Americans they serve on this website.

"Cursed is the one who does not confirm all the words of this law."  
"And all the people shall say, "Amen!"  
[Deu. 27:26, Bible, NKJV]

"**If you do not carefully observe all the words of this law** that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and awesome name, THE LORD YOUR GOD, **then the LORD will bring upon you and your descendants extraordinary plagues--great and prolonged plagues--and serious and prolonged sicknesses.**"  
[Deut. 28:58-59, Bible, NKJV]

Our approach is *exactly* the same approach as Jesus took when he came down to earth to liberate us from slavery to sin. The first sinners He met with were tax collectors and He tried to educate them that there was a Higher (God's) law that they were violating and ignoring.

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees [lawyers], hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the [God's] law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone."



1 [\[Matthew 23:23, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

2 One of these tax collectors was so impressed by what Jesus said ([Matthew/Levi](#)) that he became an Apostle! That is exactly  
3 what we want to see happening to IRS agents and Americans everywhere: transformation, salvation, and conversion.

4 The only type of activity we intend to oppose is [unlawful](#) activity, and if you have a beef with what we call [unlawful](#), we  
5 simply ask that you defend your position and respect our due process rights under the Constitution by rebutting the  
6 overwhelming evidence of government wrongdoing contained in:

7 [Tax Deposition Questions](#), Family Guardian Fellowship  
8 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Deposition.htm>

9 in order to "answer" our collective Petition for Redress of Grievances under the First Amendment and to demonstrate *exactly*  
10 what aspect of the extensive evidence supporting our views or opinions that you regard as incorrect or false. These questions  
11 are *not* questions of opinion or law and we aren't asking for legal advice. They are instead questions of fact based on the  
12 government's own statements and actions available from public records and we are asking you to present evidence of at least  
13 equal weight to exonerate yourself of a conviction for treason, extortion, slavery, and corruption in the court of public opinion.  
14 These are serious crimes that in fact warrant the death penalty if properly adjudicated by an impartial decision maker. We  
15 welcome anyone to use our [Tax Deposition Questions, Family Guardian Fellowship](#) and the accompanying evidence to prove  
16 our research is wrong and when it is proven wrong with contradictory evidence of at least equal weight, we will gladly change  
17 or improve it so that our ministry doesn't hurt or mislead anyone. All of the remedies we propose to the problems our society  
18 faces as documented in our ministry materials focus on [lawful, nonviolent confrontation and political and legal activism and](#)  
19 [derive directly from the word of God and the Bible.](#)

20 The focus of this website is NOT "getting rich quick", achieving prosperity, or maximizing the property or the money you  
21 can acquire or keep. To do so would be to encourage greed, covetousness, and materialism, which are the very evils that  
22 gave rise to most of the social problems we are trying to combat on this website. We want to see you blessed, but perhaps  
23 that blessing may come in a form you weren't expecting.

24 *"The proud have forged a lie against me, but I will keep Your precepts with my whole heart. Their heart is as fat*  
25 *as grease, but I delight in Your law. **It is good for me that I have been afflicted, that I may learn Your statutes.***  
26 ***The law of Your mouth is better to me than thousands of coins of gold and silver."***  
27 *[Psalm 119:69-72, Bible, NKJV]*

28 *"My brethren, count it all joy when you fall into various trials, knowing that the testing of your faith produces*  
29 *patience. But let patience have its perfect work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking nothing."*  
30 *[James 1:2-4, Bible, NKJV]*

31 *"If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. For whoever*  
32 *desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. For what profit is it to a man*  
33 *if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul? <sup>27</sup>For the*  
34 *Son of Man will come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He will reward each according to his*  
35 *works."*  
36 *[Matt. 16:24-27, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *"Blessed are you poor, for yours is the kingdom of God."*  
38 *[Luke 6:20, Bible, NKJV]*

39 *"Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves [the IRS] break*  
40 *in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves*  
41 *do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also."*  
42 *[Matt. 6:19-21, Bible, NKJV]*

43 *"If you [a rich man] want to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure*  
44 *in heaven; and come, follow Me."*  
45 *[Jesus in Matt. 19:21, Bible, NKJV]*

46 We want to set you free from slavery to "things" (materialism) and to money. You do not own the things you have: They  
47 own you!

48 *"Take heed and beware of covetousness, for one's life does not consist in the abundance of the things he*  
49 *possesses."*

1 [\[Luke 12:15, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

2 We do not intend to make following [God's laws](#) or the tax code *risk free* because NO ONE can do that for you. Furthermore,  
3 even if someone could, it would render your obedience to God meaningless. The measure of our faith and obedience to God  
4 is how much we have to *give up* or sacrifice in adverse circumstances. We value things based on the price we had to pay to  
5 acquire them.

6 *"If anyone desires to come after Me [God], let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For  
7 whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it."  
8 [Jesus in [Matt. 16:24-25, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

9 *"Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven."  
10 [[Matt. 5:10, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

11 *"Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be filled."  
12 [Jesus in [Matt. 5:6, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

13 We are not here to give you what you *want*, but what God in His infinite wisdom and authority says you *need, which is*  
14 *contentment and peace in any circumstance* (see [Hebrews 13:5](#) and [1 Tim. 6:8](#)). We are not here to respond to *every* last  
15 minute frenetic emergency of our more discontented and impatient readers who have chosen (against our advice) to  
16 procrastinate learning about the law for themselves, only to be compelled at great expense to depend at the last minute on  
17 some "guru" or "expert" to "rescue" them from their own ignorance, laziness, impatience, and greed. We think it violates  
18 [God's laws](#) to be anxious or fearful over what our corrupted public "servants" in the IRS are going to do to *steal* your money.  
19 Instead, we want you to be very wise about how to respond and courageous in rebuking and fighting evil:

20 *"Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves. Therefore be wise as serpents and harmless as doves.  
21 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to councils and scourge you in their synagogues. You will be  
22 brought before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they  
23 deliver you up, do not worry about how or what you should speak. For it will be given to you in that hour what  
24 you should speak: for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you. Now brother  
25 will deliver brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to  
26 be put to death. And you will be hated by all for My name's sake. But he who endures to the end will be saved."  
27 [[Matt. 10:16-22, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

28 We believe it is pointless and a waste of our time to try to persuade people who are impatient or selfish or arrogant or who  
29 refuse to learn how to be respectful, to listen, or to question authority. Humility, respect, patience, unselfishness, listening  
30 skills, and the strong desire to question authority are the foundation of an informed and enlightened mind and are necessary  
31 prerequisites to being a free and sovereign person or a person who will learning *anything* from this website.

32 We are *not* here to be a "fish supplier" to the whole world or to save the world from its own sin. It is only God and your own  
33 faith in Him and obedience to [His law](#) that can do that. Instead, we are here to teach *humble* and disciplined men and women  
34 with steadfast and obedient faith in God *how* to fish for themselves.

35 *"Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men."  
36 [Jesus in [Matt. 4:19, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

37 Rather, we believe that [liberty](#) and [freedom](#) are and always have been a "do-it yourself" endeavor and are *impossible* without  
38 steadfast faith in and obedience to God and His laws over and above man's laws. The focus of our website is therefore to:

- 39 1. Show you the truth about your lawful responsibilities.
- 40 2. Encourage you to be committed in studying and knowing both [God's law](#) and [man's law](#) for yourself.
- 41 3. Encourage religious faith and complete obedience to [God's laws](#). We can't transcend man's law without steadfast  
42 obedience to [God's law](#) or the result will be nothing but vanity and sin. As Bob Dylan says: "[You gotta serve somebody.](#)"
- 43 4. Enable you to discern when man's law conflicts with [God's law](#) so that you can choose [God's law](#) over man's law in all  
44 cases.
- 45 5. *Most importantly:* To embolden you to *passionately act* in defense of justice based on the firm convictions that you  
46 develop from your own personal study of both God's and man's law

47 At the same time, we think "[spirituality](#)" and one's "heart condition" are more important than "[legalism](#)". "[Spirituality](#)"  
48 encourages and inspires people while "[legalism](#)" simply alienates them and is evidence of immaturity and selfishness. The

1 man of strength will use his empathy, his leadership skills, and his good example to achieve just ends and will only use  
2 legalism as a last resort.

3 *"You may just be the only Bible some people ever read."*  
4 *[Family Guardian Fellowship]*

5 *"People don't care how much you know until they know how much you care."*  
6 *[Family Guardian Fellowship]*

7 *"When a man's ways please the LORD, He makes even his enemies to be at peace with him."*  
8 *[Prov. 16:7, Bible, NKJV]*

9 *"The words of a wise man's mouth are gracious, But the lips of a fool shall swallow him up;"*  
10 *[Ecc. 10:2, Bible, NKJV]*

11 *"...he who wins souls is wise."*  
12 *[Prov. 11:30, Bible, NKJV]*

13 **We are NOT affiliated with any of the following extremist groups or ideologies nor do we advocate their views:**

- 14 1. Groups:  
15 1.1. Anti-semites  
16 1.2. Christian identity  
17 1.3. Communists  
18 1.4. Democratic party  
19 1.5. Militia  
20 1.6. Montana Freemen  
21 1.7. Nazis  
22 1.8. Patriots  
23 1.9. Skinheads  
24 1.10. Socialist party  
25 1.11. White supremists  
26 2. Ideologies:  
27 2.1. Racism  
28 2.2. Liberalism  
29 2.3. Common law courts advocacy  
30 2.4. Trust or tax "scams" advocacy

31 **As a matter of fact, we discourage "labels" or "stereotypes" of any kind because we think the main motivation for**  
32 **using them is ARROGANCE, DISCRIMINATION, PREJUDICE, and HATE. God commands us to love our**  
33 **neighbor, not hate him (Lev. 19:18). If you simply can't resist using some kind of derogatory label to describe us like**  
34 **"frivolous", "stupid", "idiot" or "extremist", then quite frankly, you are a mentally ill person who needs**  
35 **psychological therapy and an attitude adjustment. Bigotry, supremacy, and inferiority complex are the characteristics**  
36 **of people who must compulsively use labels such as these. Labels also provide a convenient way to be**  
37 **INTELLECTUALLY LAZY because once you label someone, you relieve yourself from the responsibility to be**  
38 **intellectually honest enough to investigate and rebut their arguments and rationally show them why they are mistaken.**  
39 **The courts have a name for such people, and they are called terrorists, hate crime perpetrators, and verbal abusers**  
40 **who propagate verbal violence upon their victims and these people are sentenced to anger management courses and**  
41 **jail time routinely.**

42 Flattery and "lip service" will achieve *nothing* with us because pride or self-aggrandizement aren't the reason for this website.  
43 This document and our website aren't about "us" or the vanity of everything man does or attempts to do. It is about knowing  
44 and glorifying and **obeying** the one and only God, because after all is said and done, the very *essence* of worship is obedience.  
45 Talk and rituals are cheap, but those who **DO** God's commandments are rare indeed.

46 *"Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices,*  
47 *As in obeying the voice of the LORD?*  
48 ***Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice,***  
49 ***And to heed than the fat of rams.***  
50 ***For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft,***

1 *And stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry.*  
 2 *Because you have rejected the word of the LORD,*  
 3 *He also has rejected you from being king [and sovereign over your government]."*  
 4 *[1 Sam. 15:22-23, Bible, NKJV]*

5 *"Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves [is a citizen of] the world, the love of the Father*  
 6 *is not in Him. For all that is in the world--the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life--is not of*  
 7 *the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God*  
 8 *abides forever."*  
 9 *[1 John 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]*

10 *"Let us hear the conclusion of this whole matter: Fear [respect] God and **keep His***  
 11 *commandments, for this is man's all.* *For God will bring every work into judgment,*  
 12 *including every secret thing, whether good or evil."*  
 13 *[Eccl. 12:13-14, Bible, NKJV]*

14 Instead of saying "God bless America" we ought to be saying "America bless God":

15 *"I will bless the LORD at all times; His praise shall continually be in my mouth."*  
 16 *[Psalm 34:1, Bible, NKJV]*

17 The way our readers can best show their appreciation for the work that God accomplishes through us and this website is to  
 18 *passionately ACT* on what they learn from our website and to educate and encourage others to act as well in obedience to  
 19 God. We want our readers to "take up arms [intellectually and figuratively] in defense of liberty" like our great forefathers  
 20 did who gave us this wonderful and blessed country. The main goal is *justice* achieved through education and *action*. We  
 21 will do everything we can to equip you with the tools and the truth that are needed to be effective in the battle against the  
 22 evils described on this website. In the end, however, if you are *unwilling* to *passionately act* and *do justice* as the Lord  
 23 requires of you after being exposed to the truths on this website, then you are *wasting your time here and also interfering*  
 24 *with the efforts of men more noble and worthy than yourself by wasting the precious resources that God has entrusted to us*  
 25 *for your benefit as His fiduciary:*

26 *"And now, Israel, **what does the Lord your God require of you, but to fear the Lord your God, to walk in all***  
 27 *His ways and to love Him, to serve the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul, and to keep*  
 28 *the commandments of the Lord and His statutes [laws] which I command you today for your good?"*  
 29 *[Deut. 10:12-13, Bible, NKJV]*

30 *"But **whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him.** By this we know that we are in Him."*  
 31 *[1 John 2:5, Bible, NKJV]*

32 *"**For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments.** And His commandments are not burdensome."*  
 33 *[1 John 5:3, Bible, NKJV]*

34 *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My*  
 35 *Father in heaven."*  
 36 *[Matt. 7:21, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *"Therefore, to him who knows to do good and **does not DO** it, to him it is sin."*  
 38 *[James 4:17, Bible, NKJV]*

39 *"**Blessed are those who do** His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may*  
 40 *enter through the gates into the city."*  
 41 *[Rev. 22:14; Bible, NKJV]*

42 *"Now therefore, listen to me, my children, For **blessed are those who keep my ways.**"*  
 43 *[Prov. 8:32; Bible, NKJV]*

44 *"He has shown you, O man, what is good;*  
 45 *And **what does the Lord require of you***

1 But to **DO** justly,  
 2 To love mercy,  
 3 And to walk humbly with your God?"  
 4 [[Micah 6:8](#), Bible, NKJV]

5 "For I have come [as Truth] to set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-  
 6 law against her mother-in law; and a man's enemies will be those of his own household. [Truth and allegiance  
 7 to Truth divides] **He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me.** [and He who loves his  
 8 **money or his possessions more than Me is not worthy of Me, Matt. 19:21]** And he who loves son or daughter

9 more than Me is not worthy of Me. **And he who does not take his**  
 10 **cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.** He  
 11 who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it. He who receives you receives  
 12 Me, and he who receives Me receives Him who sent Me."  
 13 [Jesus in [Matt. 10:35-38](#), Bible, NKJV]

14 "But **he who looks into the perfect law of liberty** and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer **but a**  
 15 **DOER of the work,** this one **will be blessed in what he does."**  
 16 [[James 1:25](#), Bible, NKJV]

17 In **doing** God's will, we sanctify and separate ourselves from the rest of the unbelieving world and many of the people in our  
 18 own country and even our own families, and God has said **this** is what He expects from us:

19 "Come out from among them [the unbelievers]  
 20 And be separate, says the Lord.  
 21 Do not touch what is unclean,  
 22 And I will receive you.  
 23 I will be a Father to you,  
 24 And you shall be my sons and daughters,  
 25 Says the Lord Almighty."  
 26 [[2 Corinthians 6:17-18](#), Bible, NKJV]

27 "**Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves [is a citizen of] the world, the love of the**  
 28 **Father is not in Him.** For all that is in the world--the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life--  
 29 is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will  
 30 of God abides forever."  
 31 [[1 John 2:15-17](#), Bible, NKJV]

32 "Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you now know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever  
 33 therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God."  
 34 [[James 4:4](#), Bible, NKJV]

35 "**Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this:** to visit orphans and widows in their trouble,  
 36 and to **keep oneself unspotted from the world [and the corrupted governments and laws of the world]."**  
 37 [[James 1:27](#), Bible, NKJV]

38 "And you shall be holy to Me, **for I the Lord am holy, and have separated you from the peoples, that you should**  
 39 **be Mine.**"  
 40 [[Leviticus 20:26](#), Bible, NKJV]

41 "I am a stranger in the earth;  
 42 Do not hide Your commandments from me."  
 43 [[Psalm 119:19](#), Bible, NKJV]

44 "I have become a stranger to my brothers,  
 45 And an alien to my mother's children;  
 46 Because zeal for Your house has eaten me up,  
 47 And the reproaches of those who reproach You have fallen on me."  
 48 [[Psalm 69:8-9](#), Bible, NKJV]

The above also happens to be the admitted goal of our courts and our government, which have been heavily promoting "separation of church and state", because WE, as Christians, are the church. 1 Cor. 3:16-17 identifies our bodies as a "temple of God". A temple is a place where we worship our God.

*"Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are."*  
[1 Cor. 3:16-17, Bible, NKJV]

*"ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular [individually]"*  
[1 Cor. 12:27, Bible, NKJV]

Therefore, we as Christians must completely separate ourselves from the pagan state and the subsidizing of the corrupted activities of the pagan state through our earnings or our labor, which belong not to the state, but to God alone. We think THIS is what Jefferson had in mind when he said that we needed a "wall of separation between church and state". For the same reasons, we also endorse the following other forms of separation of the people and state to further promote the separation of powers doctrine:

1. **Separation of the federal and state governments:** Making the states of the Union once again completely sovereign and free by removing the flow of money to the federal government that is causing the states to surrender their sovereignty for money. See <http://www.freestateproject.org> as an example. See also "How Scoundrels Corrupted our Republican Government" at <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>.
2. **Separation of marriage and state:** Eliminate state marriage licenses to remove government jurisdiction from family life. See the following for details:  

<p><u>Sovereign Christian Marriage</u>, Form #06.009  <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm">http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm</a></p>
---
3. **Separation of family and state:** Not making individuals subject to taxation or government regulation by correcting their citizenship status to put them outside of government jurisdiction. Showing them how to govern themselves within the family so they don't need government involvement to settle or arbitrate disputes. See our Family Constitution at <http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm> for details.
4. **Separation of school and state:** School vouchers so that people can take their children out of public schools and put them into private schools using the money they used to pay to the government. This will reintroduce our children and future generations to Christian principles so that morality and absolute standards of right and wrong can return to our society and our government. Visit the Alliance for the Separation of School and State at <http://www.sepschool.org/> for further details.
5. **Separation of retirement and state:** Eliminating Socialist Security and forcing people to save for and fund their own retirement. See also section 2.9 and following.
6. **Separation of money and state:** Return to the gold standard and elimination of the Federal Reserve. See also section 2.8.9.2. Visit People for Perfect Economy at <http://www.perfecteconomy.com/> for further details.
7. **Separation of commerce and state:** Getting rid of social security numbers or any form of government-issued number to track people, so that their private lives will once again be completely private. If banks still think they need numbers, then transform to a privately issued number and prohibit government from accessing information about the transactions of individuals. Eliminating illegal enforcement of currency transaction laws by banks.
8. **Separation of media and state:** Eliminating censorship of the media through IRS persecution of media sources who are "politically incorrect". See our Media and Intelligence page.

Government and liberal rights groups and the courts: Why don't you defend and protect our right to promote THIS particular brand of "separation of church and state"? For government to admit that we don't have the right to use our property and our person in support of the above goals is to admit that we really don't have property rights, that government owns all property, and that we rent it from them through the taxes we pay. The right to exclude others or the state is the essence of property rights, as a matter of fact, and the right to happiness guaranteed by our Declaration of Independence is the equivalent of our property rights, according to our courts. Courts that won't defend our right to the above goals basically must admit that they are at war against our happiness.

All of the above goals which collectively limit the size and power and the growth of the government are the key to restoring our liberties and freedoms. They are the essence and an extension of the "separation of powers doctrine".

*"The history of liberty is the history of the limitation of governmental power, not the increase of it."*  
[Woodrow Wilson, President of the United States]

1 The ultimate result of a complete separation of powers between God and the people from their government is the just result  
 2 of being completely left alone by government, which the Supreme Court has said is the most fundamental and important right  
 3 of any civilization:

4 *"The makers of our Constitution undertook to secure conditions favorable to the pursuit of happiness. They  
 5 recognized the significance of man's spiritual nature, of his feelings and of his intellect. They knew that only a  
 6 part of the pain, pleasure and satisfactions of life are to be found in material things. They sought to protect  
 7 Americans in their beliefs, their thoughts, their emotions and their sensations. **They conferred, as against the  
 8 Government, the right to be let alone - the most comprehensive of rights and the right most valued by civilized  
 9 men.**"*  
 10 *[Olmstead v. United States, 277 U.S. 438, 478 (1928) (Brandeis, J., dissenting) see also Washington v. Harper,  
 11 494 U.S. 210 (1990)]*

12 Our mission is the same as Nehemiah described in the [Book of Nehemiah](#) in the Bible, who followed God's sovereign calling  
 13 and commission to rebuild the wall that protected the people in the city of Jerusalem from their surrounding heathen neighbors  
 14 and governments. That wall was a figurative wall of separation between the "church", which was God's followers the  
 15 Israelites, and the "state", which was the rest of the foreigners and the king who did not serve God or fear Him. The religious  
 16 people had neglected obeying God's laws and commandments and thereby become slaves of the surrounding kings and  
 17 political rulers:

18 ***"The survivors [Christians] who are left from the captivity in the province are there in great distress and  
 19 reproach. The wall [of separation between "church", which was the Jews, and "state", which was the  
 20 heathens around them] of Jerusalem is also broken down, and its gates are burned with fire."***  
 21 *[Neh. 1:3, Bible, NKJV]*

22  
 23 *Then I said to them, "You see the distress that we are in, how Jerusalem lies waste, and its gates are burned with  
 24 fire. Come and let us build the wall of [of separation in] Jerusalem that we may no longer be a reproach." And  
 25 I told them of the hand of my God which had been good upon me, and also of the king's words that he had spoken  
 26 to me. So they said, "Let us rise up and build." Then they set their hands to this good work.*

27 *But when Sanballat the Horonite, Tobiah the Ammonite official, and Geshem the Arab heard of it, they laughed  
 28 at us and despised us, and said, "What is this thing that you are doing? Will you rebel against the king?"*

29 *So I answered them, and said to them, **"The God of heaven Himself will prosper us; therefore we His servants  
 30 will arise and build [the wall of separation between church and state]..."***  
 31 *[Neh. 3:17-18, Bible, NKJV]*

32 Nehemiah was heavily ridiculed and persecuted by the government in his campaign to rebuild the wall.

33 *But it so happened, when Sanballat [the U.S. government/IRS] heard that we were rebuilding the wall that he  
 34 was furious and very indignant, and mocked the Jews [Christian patriots]. And he spoke before his brethren and  
 35 the army of Samaria, and said, **"What are these feeble Jews [Christian patriots] doing? Will they fortify  
 36 themselves? ..."***

37 *Now Tobiah the Ammonite [part of the government] was beside him, and he said, **"Whatever they build, if even  
 38 a fox goes up on it, he will break down their stone wall."***

39 ***Hear, O our God, for we are despised, turn their reproach on their own heads and give them [the opponents of  
 40 the wall of separation] as plunder to [their socialist fellow citizens in] a land of captivity! Do not cover their  
 41 iniquity, and do not let their sin be blotted out from before You; for they have provoked You to anger before  
 42 the builders [of the wall]. So we built the wall, and the entire wall was joined together up to half its height, for  
 43 the people had a mind to work.***

44 *...and all of them conspired together to come and attack Jerusalem and create confusion.*

45 *And our adversaries said, **"They will neither know nor see anything, till we come into their midst and kill them  
 46 and cause the work to cease."***  
 47 *[Neh. 4:1-11, Bible, NKJV]*

48 At one point, the heathens and nonbelievers even complained that the Jews were going to leave the tax rolls so they were left  
 49 holding the bag!

50 *And there was a great outcry of the [socialist] people and their wives [at the voting booths and in the jury boxes]  
 51 against their Jewish brethren [who were building the wall].*

1 For there were those who said, " We, our sons, and our daughters are many; therefore let us get grain [through  
2 government usury by unjust taxation], that we may eat and live."

3 There were also some who said, "We have mortgaged our lands and vineyards and houses, that we might buy  
4 grain because of the famine."

5 There were also those who said, "We have borrowed money for the king's tax on our lands and vineyards. Yet  
6 now our flesh is as the flesh of our brethren, our children as their children; and indeed we are forcing our  
7 sons and our daughters to be slaves [to the king and his taxes and the banksters], and some of our daughters  
8 have been brought into slavery. It is not in our power to redeem them, for other men have our lands and  
9 vineyards."  
10 [[Neh. 5:1-5](#), Bible, NKJV]

11 Nehemiah's righteous response was to rebuke the nobles and rulers (the government leaders and the tax collectors) for its  
12 usury and extortion, as we frequently do on this website:

13 And I became very angry when I heard their outcry and these words. After serious thought, I rebuked the nobles  
14 and rulers, and said to them, "Each of you is exacting usury from his brother." So I called a great assembly  
15 against them [as we attempt to do here on this website].

16 And I said to them, "According to our ability we have redeemed our Jewish [Christian] brethren who were sold  
17 to the nations. Now indeed, will you even sell your brethren? Or should they be sold to us?" Then they [the  
18 government leaders] were silenced [because of guilt about their usury and extortion] and found nothing to say.

19 Then I said, "What you are doing is not good, Should you not walk in the fear of our God because of the  
20 reproach of the nations, our enemies?"

21 "I also, with my brethren and my servants, am lending them money and grain. Please, let us stop this usury  
22 [illegal and unjust taxation and government extortion]! [IRS and the government must] Restore to them, even  
23 this day, their [financial control over their labor and their] lands, their vineyards, their olive groves, and their  
24 houses, also a hundredth of the money and the grain, the new wine and the oil, that you have charged them."

25 So they [the government] said, "We will restore it, and will require nothing from them; we will do as you say."  
26 Then I called the priests, and required an oath from them that they would do according to this promise.

27 ...Moreover, from the time that I was appointed to be their governor in the land of Judah, from the twentieth  
28 year until the thirty-second year of King Artaxerxes, twelve years, neither I nor my brothers ate the governor's  
29 provisions. But the former governors before me laid burdens on the people, and took from them bread and  
30 wine, besides forty shekels of silver. Yes, even their servants bore rule over the people, but I did not do so,  
31 because of the fear of God.

32 Indeed, I also continued the work on this wall, and we did not buy any land. All my servants were gathered  
33 there for the work.  
34 [[Neh. 5:6-16](#), Bible, NKJV]

35 Nehemiah's example is the solution of how to accomplish the restoration of the wall of separation between church and state.  
36 It is the model for how God has told this ministry that we must accomplish it and which we carefully follow on this website.

37 "And I saw the beast, the kings [heathen political rulers and the unbelieving democratic majorities who control  
38 them] of the earth [controlled by Satan], and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him [God]  
39 who sat on the horse and against His army."  
40 [[Revelation 19:19](#), Bible, NKJV]

41 "And I heard another voice from heaven [God] saying, 'Come out of her [Babylon the Great Harlot, a democratic  
42 state full of socialist non-believers], my people [Christians], lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her  
43 plagues.'"  
44 [[Revelation 18:4](#), Bible, NKJV]

#### 45 1.4.2 **Motivation and Inspiration**

46 "Do you see a man who excels in his work? He will stand before kings; He will not stand before unknown men."  
47 [[Prov. 22:29](#), Bible, NKJV]

48 We are bondservants of Christ Jesus. We agree unconditionally with God's Word in the Holy Scriptures, even when we don't  
49 like it. If the Word of God shatters cherished beliefs then we are willing to be shattered, no matter how painful it is. God's



1 **truth** is more important to us than personal belief, and **loyalty** to that truth more important than loyalty to traditions and the  
2 commandments of men.

3 *"**Beware lest anyone cheat you through** philosophy and empty deceit, according to **the tradition of men**  
4 [including through man's deceptive laws written by scumbag lawyers], according to the basic principles of the  
5 world, and not according to Christ, for in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily; and you are complete  
6 in Him, who is the head of all principality and power."  
7 [[Col. 2:8-10](#), Bible, NKJV]*

8 We don't cling on to personal interpretations for fear of looking stupid in the eyes of others -- once a matter is clear, then we  
9 change as fast as possible, relying solely upon the Holy Spirit.

10 There is *no stronger motivation or inspiration or higher purpose* for our life, we feel, than to honor and glorify our God, and  
11 to realize His will in the world on a large scale through our website and our books, as revealed in His love letter to us, the  
12 Bible:

13 *"**Stand fast therefore in the liberty** wherewith Christ hath made us free, **and be not entangled again with the**  
14 **yoke of bondage to the government or the income tax**."  
15 [[Galatians 5:1](#), Bible, NKJV]*

16 *"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me,  
17 Because **the Lord has anointed Me**  
18 **To preach good tidings to the poor;**  
19 He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted,  
20 **To proclaim liberty to the [IRS] captives**  
21 **And the opening of the prison to those who are bound;**  
22 **To proclaim** the acceptable year of the Lord,  
23 And **the day of vengeance of our God;**"  
24 [[Isaiah 61:1-2](#), Bible, NKJV]*

### 26 1.4.3 Ministry

27 *"My food is to do the will of Him who sent Me, and to finish His work."  
28 [[John 4:34](#), Bible, NKJV]*

29 What kind of ministry do we have? Well, it's not our ministry, it's **Christ's** ministry. We don't do anything in and of ourselves,  
30 it's all done through Him. It's not a private ministry like most of the ministries out there, which are done for "filthy lucre's  
31 sake" (Titus 1:11). We do not preach a "health and wealth gospel" either. We are very similar to the original house assemblies  
32 of the first and second century. That's where we need to get back to because;

33 *"Thus saith the LORD, Stand ye in the ways, and see, and ask for the **old paths**, where is the **good way**, and walk  
34 **therein**, and ye shall find rest for your souls."  
35 [[Jeremiah 6:16](#), Bible, NKJV]*

36 Therefore, we strive to go back to the way the early **assembly** (translated "church" in most bibles) did things. We seek to be  
37 self-governing men and women under God. We are not anti-government, because we know that government exists to keep  
38 the 'low and lawless forms of humanity' from doing violence to all, including themselves.

39 **We seek to apply God's Law to our everyday lives.** We try to get people to use the Scripture. It's a **Law book**, we want  
40 you to think of it as a Law book, we want you to use it as a Law book. That's what God intended it to be, otherwise He  
41 wouldn't have called it His ordinances, His statutes, His judgments, His precepts, His commandments, His Law. All these are  
42 Law terms. Here are some examples of God's Law in action, and keep in mind that "commandments" and "His Word" are  
43 synonymous with His **Law**:

44 *Proverbs 28:9: "One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."*

45 *Prov. 28:4: "Those who forsake the law praise the wicked, but such as keep the law contend with them."*

46 *Exodus 18:20: "And **thou shalt teach them ordinances and laws**, and shalt shew them the way wherein they must  
47 walk, and the work that they must do."*

1 Leviticus 18:4: "Ye shall do my judgments, and keep mine ordinances, to walk therein: I [am] the LORD your  
2 God."

3 2 Kings 17:37: "And the statutes, and the ordinances, and the law, and the commandment, which he wrote for  
4 you, ye shall observe to do for evermore; and ye shall not fear other gods."

5 Ezekiah 11:19-20: "And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony  
6 heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh: That they may walk in my statutes, and keep mine  
7 ordinances, and do them: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God."

8 And here are two inspirational examples of what we are talking about from the book of Psalm in the Bible:

9 **Psalm 19:7-14:**

10 *The law of the Lord is perfect converting the soul;*  
11 *The testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple;*  
12 ***The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart.***  
13 *The commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.*  
14 *The fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever;*  
15 ***The judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether.***  
16 ***More to be desired are they than gold.***  
17 *Yea, than much fine gold;*  
18 *Sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb.*  
19 ***Moreover by them Your servant is warned,***  
20 ***And in keeping them there is great reward.***  
21 *Who can understand his errors?*  
22 *Cleanse me from secret faults.*  
23 *Keep back Your servant from presumptuous sins;*  
24 *Let them not have dominion over me.*  
25 *Then I shall be blameless,*  
26 *And I shall be innocent of great transgression.*  
27 *Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart*  
28 *Be acceptable in Your sight,*  
29 *O Lord, my strength and my Redeemer.*  
30  
31  
32

33 **Psalm 119:9-16:**

34 *How can a young man cleanse his way?*  
35 *By taking heed according to Your word.*  
36 *With my whole heart I have sought You;*  
37 *Oh, let me not wander from Your commandments!*  
38 *Your word I have hidden in my heart,*  
39 *That I might not sin against You.*  
40 *Blessed are You, O Lord!*  
41 ***Teach me Your statutes.***  
42 *With my lips I have declared*  
43 *All the judgments of Your mouth.*  
44 *I have rejoiced in the way of Your testimonies.*  
45 *As much as in all riches.*  
46 *I will meditate on Your precepts.*  
47 *And contemplate Your ways.*  
48 ***I will delight myself in Your statutes.***  
49 *I will not forget Your word.*

50 We didn't write this book. The Holy Spirit working through us wrote this book and it was done not for our glory, but for the  
51 glory of the one and only God:

52 "My doctrine is not Mine, but His who sent Me. If anyone wills to do His will, he shall know concerning the  
53 doctrine, whether it is from God or whether I speak on My own authority. He who speaks from himself seeks  
54 his own glory; but He who seeks the glory of the One who sent Him is true, and no unrighteousness is in Him."  
55 [John 7:16-18, Bible]

56 The real and persistent problems in our contemporary society have nothing to do with law, but religion, as George  
57 Washington, a Christian, said:

"One's **god** dictates the kind of **law** one implements and also controls the application and development of that law over time. Given enough time, **all** non-Christian systems of law **self-destruct** in a fit of tyranny."  
[George Washington]

We believe that it would be vain and arrogant to do any of the following either on our part or on anyone else's part:

1. Claim sole authorship over anything in this website, because it represents the collective effort of many very fine people who have contributed to it.
2. Claim or infer or guarantee specific results based on the use of the materials found on this website.
3. Claim that the materials on this website are entirely free of error or mistake. Anything this size is bound to have defects and we invite you to contribute to correcting them as you find them.
4. Claim that our writings or our processes are any better than any other person or organization.
5. Assign values to people by comparing ourselves with anyone else in order to make ourselves look somehow "better".
6. Accept or take any more responsibility for our publications or information on this website than the government does for theirs. The IRS refuses to assume responsibility for the accuracy or truthfulness any of its forms, publications, telephone support, or agent actions, and so we claim the same limited liability for our information and activities. See the following for more information on this scam:  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>

Instead, this website represents the best and most sincere efforts of only one humble man doing everything he can to understand God's will and to **do it** by helping and loving his fellow man. The time he spends developing this website is a tithe to the Lord:

*"He has shown you, O man, what is good;  
**And what does the Lord require of you**  
But to **do justly**,  
**To love mercy**,  
**And to walk humbly with your God?"***  
[Micah 6:8, Bible, NKJV]

*"Blessed are those who **keep** justice  
And he who **does righteousness** [not just TALKS about it, but actually DOES it] at all times!"*  
[Psalm 106:3, Bible, NKJV]

We have nothing but the best good-faith intentions in this ministry and we hope that you will approach our ministry with the same reverent and respectful attitude. Likewise, because we are involved in a teaching ministry, we have a biblical obligation to hold ourselves to a much higher moral standard than most in order that we might have credibility and deserve your trust:

*"My brethren, let not many of you become teachers, knowing that **we shall receive a stricter judgment.**"*  
[James 3:1, Bible, NKJV]

***"If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed."***  
[1 Tim. 4:6, Bible, NKJV]

And remember, the only thing necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing.

*"The world is a dangerous place to live; **not** because of the people who are evil, but because of the people who don't do anything about it."*  
[Albert Einstein]

We view this ministry as a metaphor for the story of David and Goliath found in the Bible, [1 Sam. 17](#):

1. We are David.
2. A corrupted, evil band of tyrants that have taken over our de jure government and replaced it with an unlawful de facto government is Goliath. These tyrants are at war against their own country and their own people because of their greed and selfishness. They are plundering and robbing families and businesses of their labor and property.
3. The stone that knocks out the giant Goliath is the Truth and God's law. This stone will bring down our evil Philistine government eventually and replace it with an honest and honorable one that respects the Constitution.

4. The internet is the sling that carries the stone to the weakest part of Goliath, his temple, and kills him. For the government, the weakest part is honest men and women employed with the government who will, upon hearing the truth, defect and join our movement to become insiders who will help us expose and prosecute this tyranny and fraud.

And here is how God says we should approach this spiritual battle:

*"Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we do not wrestle with flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand."*

*"Stand therefore, having girded your waist with Truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness, and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace; above all, taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one [the IRS and the Department of Justice]. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God; praying, always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to the end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints—and for me, that utterance may be given to me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the mystery of the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in chains; that in it I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak."*  
[Ephesians 6:11-20, Bible, NKJV]

#### 1.4.4 Schooling

What school did we go to, and what degrees do we have? Well, as my father used to say:

*"I've got a PhD from the University of Hard Knocks (U.H.K.)!"*

There's only one school mentioned in scripture, and that was a school of a tyrant (Acts 19:9). And a "degree" is a Masonic concept, not a scriptural one. Our response to this inquiry is this: in John 7:14-16, the **same question** was asked among those to whom Christ Jesus was preaching. Notice that Jesus did not attend any school of human understanding of the Word of God.

*"...Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. And the Jews marveled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me."*  
[John 7:14-16]

Notice the scripture also says, "Out of the **mouth of babes** and sucklings hast thou ordained strength" (Psalm 8:2) it does not say "out of the mouth of men with degrees from schools hast thou ordained strength." It is babes innocent of the world, feeding on the milk of the living Word (1 Peter 2:1-3) whom God has appointed to rule over the affairs of men (Isaiah 3:4).

*"In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast **hid these things from the wise and prudent** [of the world], and hast revealed them unto **babes**: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight."*  
[Luke 10:21]

And who exactly are these "babes"? They are His believers and followers!:

*"At that time the disciples came to Jesus, saying, 'Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?'"*

*"Then Jesus called a little child to Him, set him in the midst of them, and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, unless you are converted and become as little children, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore whoever humbles himself as this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.'"*  
[Matt. 18:1-4, Bible, NKJV]

The Apostle Paul says "That your faith should not stand in the **wisdom of men**, but in the **power of God**" (1 Corinthians 2:5). We are not at all concerned about certificates of recognition from "recognized" seminaries which are, after all, the creations of men and not of God. Having a certificate does not mean that I am more qualified than one who knows the same thing without a certificate. In the end it is the knowledge which qualifies us, not a piece of paper saying I understand.

Proud men of degrees are usually a detriment to Christ and His assembly, because he will introduce leaven into God's Word, so as to make it more palatable.

1                   Then Jesus said to them, "**Take heed and beware of the leaven [teachings, laws, doctrine, and publications] of**  
 2                   **the Pharisees [lawyers] and the Sadducees.**" ....How is it you do not understand that I did no speak to you  
 3                   concerning bread?—but to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees." Then **they understood**  
 4                   **that He did not tell them to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees.**  
 5                   [Matt. 16:6,11,12; Bible, NKJV]

6                   God's Word has largely been lost from modern watered-down Christianity. So, if you are a proud man of degrees and  
 7                   schooling, know that God is not a respecter of persons (Romans 2:11), therefore, your degrees mean **nothing** to Him, and  
 8                   mean **nothing** to His servants. **What is written in your heart is more important than what's written on a man-made document.**

9                   I think we fall into error when we praise **men** for the word of God, rather than praise **God** for the work He does **through** men.  
 10                  God shows His mighty works **through** His people, and we hope that He is doing so through us and through this book and our  
 11                  website.

#### 12                  **1.4.5 Criticism**

13                  People sometimes say:

14                                 "*Don't you have anything good to say?"*

15                  It makes it look like we just want to bad mouth everybody. To **not** rebuke or attack sin or evil (not the sinner, but the sin) is  
 16                  to violate God's word, which says that we rebuke and chasten those we love to keep them out of harm's way:

17                                 "*As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.*"  
 18                                 [Rev. 3:19, Bible]

19                                 "*But those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them.*"  
 20                                 [Prov. 24:25, Bible]

21                                 "*And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove [rebuke] them.*"  
 22                                 [Eph. 5:11, Bible]

23                  The only time we bring anything up, as far as error goes, is when it is based upon the Word of God. It's not **us** that's doing  
 24                  the criticism, it's **God** Himself. Therefore, when we do bring up and point out errors, it is not **us** that's doing the criticism, it's  
 25                  **God's Word**. And we always have to go to His Word for the Truth, because if it's coming from just our own opinion, it's not  
 26                  the truth and no one will believe it anyway because they will think we have some kind of personal agenda that in fact we  
 27                  don't have.

28                                 "**He who rejects Me, and does not receive My words, has that which judges him—the word that I have spoken**  
 29                                 **will judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken on My own authority;** but the Father who sent Me gave  
 30                                 me a command, what I should say and what I should speak. And I know that His command is everlasting life.  
 31                                 Therefore, whatever I speak, just as the Father has tole Me, so I speak."  
 32                                 [John 12:48-50, Bible, NKJV]

33                  Additionally, we're not criticizing out of a mean spirit, but rather a constructive and hopefully beneficial spirit. The proper  
 34                  Christian attitude when one is convicted by God's word is as follows, from Psalm 141:5:

35                                 "*Let the righteous strike me;*  
 36                                 *It shall be a kindness,*  
 37                                 *And let him rebuke me;*  
 38                                 *It shall be as excellent oil;*  
 39                                 *Let my head not refuse it."*

40                  In Truth you have Love. As long as you're doing everything from the Word of God and only for the glory of God and not  
 41                  yourself or any man, you are standing in God's Truth and doing everything in Love and in righteousness.

42                  The prophets of old were always misunderstood and rejected by the people of their day, and the same fate awaits any who  
 43                  would be prophets today. **But the true measure of a man's worth is not always the number of his friends but sometimes the**  
 44                  **number of his foes.** Jesus was the best example of that.

1                   *"If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. If you were of the world, the world would*  
 2 *love its own. **Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates***  
 3 ***you. Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me,***  
 4 ***they will also persecute you.** If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. **But all these things they will do***  
 5 ***to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me. If I had not come and spoken to***  
 6 ***them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin.** He who hates me hated My father*  
 7 *also. **If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they***  
 8 ***have seen and also hated both Me and My Father.** But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is*  
 9 *written in their law, 'They hated Me without a cause.'"*  
 10 *[John 15:18-25, Bible]*

11 Every man who lives in advance of his age is sure to be misunderstood and often persecuted. Therefore, we must expect often  
 12 to be unpopular, often to stand alone, even to be maligned, perhaps to be bitterly and falsely assailed and driven `without the  
 13 camp' even of the religious world. In response to such persecution and criticism, we can only say that:

14                   *"Eagles fly high above the clouds but they fly alone."*  
 15 *[Family Guardian Fellowship]*

16 Christian leaders and preachers in our day are no longer like the apostles in the old days, who were "made as the filth of the  
 17 world" (1 Corinthians 4:13). Let us remember that greatness in man's eyes does not always mean greatness in God's eyes  
 18 (Luke 16:15).

19                   *"Arise, O Lord,*  
 20 ***Do not let man prevail;***  
 21 *Let the nations be judged in Your sight.*  
 22 *Put them in fear, O Lord,*  
 23 ***That the nations may know themselves to be but men."***  
 24 *[Psalm 9:19-20, Bible, NKJV]*

#### 25 **1.4.6 Pricing**

26 How much do we charge for material? We do not charge a price for any materials or information, because:

27                   *"...**freely** ye have received, **freely** give."*  
 28 *[Matthew 10:8, Bible, NKJV]*

29                   *"Buy the truth, and **sell it not.**"*  
 30 *[Proverbs 23:23, Bible, NKJV]*

31                   *"What is my reward then? Verily that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ **without***  
 32 ***charge,** that I abuse not my power in the gospel."*  
 33 *[1 Corinthians 9:18, Bible, NKJV]*

34 Therefore, nothing on this website can be classified as "[commercial speech](#)" and thereby excluded from First Amendment  
 35 protections. We believe that any amount of money we solicit for the profound gospel message we preach on this website  
 36 simply discredits and corrupts us. It would also needlessly give the government jurisdiction over us which is derived from  
 37 commerce under [Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the Constitution](#). This jurisdiction could and probably would be abused by  
 38 corrupt judges to subvert or stifle our gospel message and First Amendment rights, as has already happened to many other  
 39 freedom and sovereignty advocates. If Jesus had accepted money for His preaching, do you think we would still be hearing  
 40 about Him today?

41                   *"And **you shall take no bribe, for a bribe blinds the discerning and perverts the words of the righteous."***  
 42 *[Exodus 23:8, Bible, NKJV]*

43                   *"He who is greedy for gain troubles his own house,*  
 44 ***But he who hates bribes will live."***  
 45 *[Prov. 15:27, Bible, NKJV]*

46                   *"Surely oppression destroys a wise man's reason.*  
 47 *And **a bribe debases the heart.**"*  
 48 *[Ecclesiastes 7:7, Bible, NKJV]*

Consistent with His ways, the continued publishment of these matters are supported as He directs your heart, and not from the burden of a price. Like the income tax and donations to any church ministry, payment for the use of this site is entirely voluntary. Those who have it written on their heart to give will give (2 Corinthians 9:7). And we'll continue to do what we do as long as the Lord says that we're able to do it. If you want to volunteer to help, what we most need at the moment is not money, but instead is (in descending order of need):

1. **People who Will Start their Own Sovereignty Fellowships Throughout the Country.** Tools for accomplishing this are found at:

*Self Government Federation: Articles of Confederation*, Form #13.002  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

2. **Door-to-Door Proselyters and Tax Honesty Evangelists.** Start a group in your area that goes door to door and gives out flyers to your neighbors telling them about the income tax fraud and telling them that the information is available for free to all who want it. Then give them the web address of the [Taxes page](#) of our website. See [step 1.6](#) of our Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online, Form #10.004 under INSTRUCTIONS.

#### 1.4.7 **Frequently Asked Questions About Us**

##### 1.4.7.1 **Question 1: Do you file tax returns or pay income tax?**

**Question 1:** Do you file tax returns or pay income tax?

**Answer 1:** We do not pay federal income tax because we aren't subject to the code. Nowhere within the I.R.C. are those with our status listed as having a liability to do anything. [Click here for details on our status and a summary of all the available statuses](#) (OFFSITE LINK). Therefore, we are purposefully excluded pursuant to the rules of statutory construction:

*"Expressio unius est exclusio alterius. A maxim of statutory interpretation meaning that the expression of one thing is the exclusion of another. Burgin v. Forbes, 293 Ky. 456, 169 S.W.2d. 321, 325; Newblock v. Bowles, 170 Okl. 487, 40 P.2d. 1097, 1100. Mention of one thing implies exclusion of another. When certain persons or things are specified in a law, contract, or will, an intention to exclude all others from its operation may be inferred. Under this maxim, if statute specifies one exception to a general rule or assumes to specify the effects of a certain provision, other exceptions or effects are excluded."*  
 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 581]

If money was unlawfully withheld or paid from our earnings, we submit a nonresident, nonstatutory claim for return of funds unlawfully paid to the government.

1. We don't use any IRS forms, because all their forms are for [franchisees](#) (OFFSITE LINK) called "[taxpayers](#)" so that we would misrepresent our status if we used these forms. [Click here for details.](#)
2. We use a custom form that specifically says it is for use by those who are not franchisees called "[taxpayers](#)" as defined in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(14\)](#).
3. It is a criminal offense in violation of [18 U.S.C. §912](#) for someone like us who is not a "[public officer](#)" and a "[taxpayer](#)" to file a statutory "[return](#)".
4. Our submission satisfies all the requirements for a valid statutory "return" even though it isn't a statutory "[return](#)". See section 5 of the following:  
[Legal Requirement to File Federal Income Tax Returns](#), Form #05.009 (OFFSITE LINK)
  - [Sample](#)
  - [PDF in member subscriptions](#)
  - [Member Subscriptions](#)-how to gain access to the above document

We believe it would be hypocritical of us to take a position on this website that is not consistent with what we are actually doing or would be willing to do when required. Therefore, *we as fellowship members do indeed practice exactly what we preach*, and we believe that doing so adds far more credibility to what we say than the words themselves. You won't find any hypocrisy in *anything* we say on this website. For further information about how to submit tax returns that are consistent in their entirety with everything found on this website, see:

1. [Federal Nonresident Nonstatutory Claim for Return of Funds Unlawfully Paid to the Government](#), Form #15.001

<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm> (OFFSITE LINK)

2. *Federal Nonresident Nonstatutory Claim for Return of Funds Unlawfully Paid to the Government*, Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online, Form #10.004, FORMS: Form #7.1  
<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/IncomeTaxRtn/Federal/NRFedClaim.htm>
3. *Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online, Form #10.004, FORMS section, Section 7 (on left) entitled "Federal Income Tax Return Forms"*
4. *Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online, Form #10.004, FORMS section, Section 8 (on left) entitled "State Income Tax Return Forms"*

See the [Discovery Journal](#) documenting some experiences with the IRS and state taxing authorities implementing the truths found on this website.

#### 1.4.7.2 **Question 2: Do you have any court cites favorable to your position?**

**Question 2:** I really like your website. However, I notice there is an absence of cases cited where the taxpayer has won as against the tactics of the government. Did I miss something or have you excluded these cases from your site? Can you give me any recent decisions where the federal courts have agreed with anything you say in your pages.

**Answer 2:** First of all, we don't help "[taxpayers](#)" on this website. If you are a "[taxpayer](#)", please visit <http://irs.gov> for information. As far as "nontaxpayers", this question is answered most succinctly at the beginning of our *Flawed Tax Arguments to Avoid, Form #08.004*. The main reasons which explain why there is little or no case law at the circuit court level or below that even addresses most of the issues appearing in this book include:

1. The government doesn't want you to know. If the people knew the truth about the voluntary nature of Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code, they would choose to unvolunteer. This also explains much of the cover-ups instigated by every branch of the federal government described in Chapter 6 of this book.
2. The lack of legal education of the average American causes them to have an unreasonable aversion to being called a "non-resident non-person" or classifying themselves as a "national" but not a "citizen" under federal law. Therefore, few people even attempt maintaining this status. This leads to a dearth of case law on the subject. One payroll person we talked to with over 25 years of experience told us that in their entire career, they have never processed a W-8. New hires are simply told "W-4 or the Highway". That doesn't make the "non-resident non-person" position wrong. It's just that the IRS propaganda campaign to scare people away from it by using the word "alien" instead "state national" has been very effective, and has caused ignorant, fearful, and misinformed private employers to coerce their new hires into basically submitting withholding paperwork that in many cases they know is fraudulent because completed under illegal duress but which they are given no option to correct without being effectively FIRED.
3. The federal district and circuit courts are territorial in nature and can only rule over the federal zone, maritime jurisdiction, and issues relating to federal property and employees. Consequently, they just don't and can't speak to issues relating to "sovereigns" who are "nationals" under [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(21\)](#) but not STATUTORY "citizens" under or [8 U.S.C. §1401](#). This is discussed in sections 7.6 through 7.6.12 of the *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008.
4. [Federal Rule of Civil Procedure 17\(b\)](#) says that the rules of decision in any federal court are those of the domicile of the defendant. When a person domiciled within a state of the Union is being prosecuted civilly for a tax liability, the federal courts are therefore obligated to apply state law ONLY and may NOT apply any provision of the Internal Revenue Code against the defendant. Furthermore, if the defendant is also a Christian and has claimed heaven as his domicile instead of earth, then he can only be prosecuted civilly under God's laws in the Holy Bible. Consequently, it is meaningless to quote federal cases because they are irrelevant, and only the rulings of the state courts or ecclesiastical courts are relevant for those who have the proper domicile not within the "United States", which is defined as being limited to the "District of Columbia" in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(9\)](#) and (a)(10).
5. There is no federal common law within states of the Union, according to the Supreme Court in *Erie Railroad v. Tompkins*, [304 U.S. 64](#) (1938), for cases where diversity of citizenship is asserted under [28 U.S.C. §1332](#). This kind of situation would be precisely the situation that would apply to those who use the arguments in this book or the *Tax Fraud Prevention Manual*, Form #06.008. Consequently, it's meaningless to cite cases from the federal District or circuit courts anyway as evidence of what happens to people who decide to pursue the methods documented in our book. The Supreme Court says the statutory and common law of the state, and not the federal government, must be applied in cases where diversity of citizenship is claimed, including in federal tax trials.



6. The [Rules of Decision Act, 28 U.S.C. §1652](#) says that the laws of the state and not the federal government are to be applied as the rules of decision in federal courts in cases where they apply. The section doesn't mention which cases where they apply, because they don't want to admit that these cases include those who either have a domicile in a state of the Union, or those who are "nationals" but not "citizens" of the United States. Therefore, once again, federal caselaw is irrelevant to a state citizen domiciled within his state who has corrected government records to correctly reflect that voluntary choice.
7. The IRS says in its [Internal Revenue Manual \(I.R.M.\), Section 4.10.7.2.9.8](#), that cases below the Supreme Court may NOT be cited against anyone other than the individual who litigated. The reason it says this is that there is no federal common law in states of the Union, as indicated in the previous item.

[Internal Revenue Manual  
Section 4.10.7.2.9.8 \(05-14-1999\) Importance of Court Decisions](#)

1. *Decisions made at various levels of the court system are considered to be interpretations of tax laws and may be used by either examiners or taxpayers to support a position.*

2. *Certain court cases lend more weight to a position than others. A case decided by the U.S. Supreme Court becomes the law of the land and takes precedence over decisions of lower courts. The Internal Revenue Service must follow Supreme Court decisions. For examiners, Supreme Court decisions have the same weight as the Code.*

3. *Decisions made by lower courts, such as Tax Court, District Courts, or Claims Court, are binding on the Service only for the particular taxpayer and the years litigated. Adverse decisions of lower courts do not require the Service to alter its position for other taxpayers.*

8. Most people who litigate rely on an attorney who has been just as "dumbed-down" on legal issues in law school as the average high school graduate from public "fool" system.
9. Licensed attorneys who rock the boat and challenge substantive issues relating to abuse of government power become scapegoats for the courts, so they learn quickly not to rock the boat or challenge government jurisdiction. This is explained in our revealing article "[Petition for Admission to Practice](#)".

Based on the above, when a state citizen domiciled in his state litigates in a federal court on income tax issues, the only lawful choice the federal court has is to kick it and remand it to a state court to rule on because only state law applies anyway. Sometimes the litigant will then transfer the case to state court as a Bivens Action against the agent for wrongful collection. When the state courts rule on this issue, they will often try to protect the IRS agent who violated the law by asserting sovereign or official immunity. Even though the agent did in fact violate enacted state law, ordinarily, the state courts, out of "professional courtesy" (among fellow thieves), don't like to prosecute IRS agents who are enforcing outside their authority, because the states are receiving illegal "kickbacks" and "bribes" as a reward or "incentive" under the ACTA (Agreements on Coordination of Tax Administration) agreement they have with the United States Secretary of the Treasury. These illegal bribes and kickbacks perpetuate:

- The mis-enforcement of the I.R.C. by the IRS.
- The mis-enforcement of the state revenue codes by state taxing authorities.
- Continue the breakdown of [separation of powers](#) between state and federal governments in violation of the Constitution.
- Conspiracy against and violation of rights by both state and federal governments

The IRS knows about the above ACTA scam and has tried to cover it up. They used to post the ACTA agreements on their website but took them down when people pointed out the conflict of interest (in violation of [18 U.S.C. §208](#)) they created for public servants. These are the main reasons you won't find many federal cases that raise most of the issues raised on this website. Some secondary but less prevalent reasons for the dearth of case law are bias and favoritism on the part of judges in violation of [28 U.S.C. §455](#), [28 U.S.C. §144](#), and [18 U.S.C. §208](#). This bias is documented in the following sections of this book:

- Section 2.8.13: Judicial tyranny
- Section 2.8.13.8: Nonpublication of court rulings
- Section 5.10: How Can I Know When I've Discovered the Truth About Income Taxes?
- Section 6.6: Judicial Conspiracy to Protect the Income Tax.

We also describe in our article entitled "Why the federal courts can't properly address these questions", for instance, why it is literally IMPOSSIBLE to have a fair trial relating to income taxes, why federal courts seldom even have a lawfully constituted jury, and why any judge who is either subject to IRS extortion or receives benefits derived from income taxes must recuse himself:

<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/WhyCourtsCantAddressQuestions.htm>

The above references conclusively prove using enacted positive law and historical information that the federal courts are systematically suppressing information about successes using our methods, because they don't want the damn to break and a flood of liberated Americans to stop paying an illegal bribe and extortion under duress to the IRS. We explain the reasons for this in section 1.11.5 of this book entitled "Why Won't the IRS and the U.S. Congress Tell Us the Truth?". Under such circumstances, you can expect the federal courts and most attorneys to be "politically correct" by advantaging the government and publishing cases where the litigant was ignorant and an easy target and who lost, but to make *unpublished* verdicts that are favorable to the positions in this book. This is one of the secrets of how our deceitful public servants has been able to conceal the truth for so long. It is precisely this kind of institutionalized tyranny and lying that allowed the Soviet Union to survive for the 70 years that it did using its propaganda machine, Pravda, to spread lies and disinformation before the whole big lie collapsed in on itself and the system self-destructed from its own weight. The same fate awaits the U.S. federal government if we don't stop the tyranny now before it gets worse.

We're sure you can understand that it has been a *monstrous* undertaking assembling what we have so far in this book and on our website. Remember that among the important conditions we have for the privilege of you being able to use this website is that you contribute *something* to improving it by doing some of your own research and discovery, and that you read, understand, comply with, and obey the [Copyright/Software License Agreement](#) and [Disclaimer](#). We would therefore insist that YOU, our readers, help us build such a database of successes because we can't do it alone, absent your involvement, in the current environment where the courts are suppressing information prejudicial to the interests of government workers by making cases unpublished. Read section 6.6.6 of our book (an interesting number!) for one example of how the government suppressed the truth in that case. It is appalling. There's an obvious cover-up going on here.

### **1.4.7.3 Question 3: Isn't it a contradiction for you to be working for the government on the one hand and criticizing that government on the other hand?**

**Question 3:** Isn't it a contradiction for you, on the one hand, to be working for the government, and on the other hand to be criticizing that same government?

**Answer 3:** This is a free country and the First Amendment guarantees us a right of Free Speech, and especially if that speech is based on religious beliefs and it is done during my off-duty time. The First Amendment also guarantees us a right to petition our government for Redress of Grievances (wrongs) and the focus of this website is all about wrongs committed by the government and how they need to be remedied in order to restore the credibility and integrity of our government. We *do not* hate government. The only thing we hate is what God commands us to hate in the Bible, including:

1. Evil ([Prov. 8:13](#))
2. A proud look. ([Prov. 6:17](#))
3. A lying tongue. ([Psalm 119:163](#), [Psalm 119:104](#), [Prov. 13:5](#), [Prov. 6:17](#))
4. Hands that shed innocent blood. ([Prov. 6:17](#))
5. A heart that devises wicked plans. ([Prov. 6:18](#))
6. A false witness who speaks lies. ([Prov. 6:19](#))
7. One who sows discord among brethren. ([Prov. 6:19](#))

All of the above things we hate are *behaviors*, not *people*. *God hates sin and lawlessness but he loves the sinner and we are no different*. See Sections 2.3.6, 3.7, and 5.10.14 of the [Family Constitution](#) for further details on the subject of hating and judgment as it relates to this subject. At the same time, our Christian beliefs also require us to rebuke and reprove *evil* when we see it:

- 1 • "*As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten:* be zealous therefore, and repent."  
2 [[Rev. 3:19](#)]
- 3 • "But *those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them.*"  
4 [[Prov. 24:25](#)]
- 5 • "And *have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove [rebuke] them.*"  
6 [[Eph. 5:11](#)]

7 Thomas Jefferson, one of our founding fathers, a President of the United States, a judge, a patriot, a devout Christian,  
8 and the author of our Declaration of Independence confirmed that we should be jealous of our liberties and watchful  
9 of our government for encroachment upon them when he [said](#):

10 *"It would be a dangerous delusion were a confidence in the men of our choice to silence our fears for the safety*  
11 *of our rights... Confidence is everywhere the parent of despotism. Free government is founded in jealousy, and*  
12 *not in confidence. It is jealousy and not confidence which prescribes limited constitutions, to bind down those*  
13 *whom we are obliged to trust with power... Our Constitution has accordingly fixed the limits to which, and no*  
14 *further, our confidence may go... In questions of power, then, let no more be heard of confidence in man, but bind*  
15 *him down from mischief by the chains of the Constitution."*  
16 [*Thomas Jefferson: Draft Kentucky Resolutions, 1798. ME 17:388* ]

17 *"Leave no authority existing not responsible to the people."*  
18 [*Thomas Jefferson to Isaac H. Tiffany, 1816. ME 15:66*]

19 *"Unless the mass retains sufficient control over those entrusted with the powers of their government, these will*  
20 *be perverted to their own oppression, and to the perpetuation of wealth and power in the individuals and their*  
21 *families selected for the trust. Whether our Constitution has hit on the exact degree of control necessary, is yet*  
22 *under experiment."*  
23 [*Thomas Jefferson to M. van der Kemp, 1812. ME 13:136*]

24 Quite to the contrary, I see it as hypocritical to be working for the DOD or the government and NOT do or say the  
25 things that appear on this website. I'm a patriot and I love my country and my fellow citizens. When I joined the  
26 military, I took an oath to "Support and defend the Constitution against all enemies, foreign and domestic so help  
27 me God." Right now, the biggest enemy of our rights and freedoms is not *foreign* or an Afghani terrorist, it is  
28 *domestic* and it is treasonous employees of our very own covetous and deceitful government, who are trying very  
29 hard to transform our Republic into an atheistic socialist democracy and thereby trample on our God given  
30 Constitutional *individual* rights. See chapter 4, and in particular sections 4.5 and 4.7 of this book for details on this.  
31 I see it as hypocritical indeed for any employee of the government who took a similar oath to criticize the goals and  
32 objectives of this website, which are explained in our [DISCLAIMER](#) and in section 1.1 of this book and we have  
33 three ex IRS agents with over 20 years of collective experience who agree with us and who resigned from the IRS  
34 after they learned the truths on this and other websites! At the same time, it isn't ALL government employees who  
35 are committing this treason. It is only selected employees working for the Congress, Treasury, IRS, and Department  
36 of [IN]justice, who obfuscate the tax code, illegally enforce it, and look the other way by not punishing those in the  
37 courts and the IRS who violate the law in the process. They are on the take, and they'll do anything to get your  
38 money, and the Bible agrees that the love of money by these crooked people is the root of all evil in [1 Tim. 6:10](#).  
39 There is principally no difference between all the corporate scandals we have seen of late and the cooking of the  
40 books and obfuscation of the law that surrounds collection and expenditure of the Subtitle A federal income tax. All  
41 the crooked corporations have been doing is emulating what government has been doing with Social Security since  
42 the program started in 1936. See section 2.9 of this book for further details on this scandal.

#### 43 **1.4.7.4 Question 4: Isn't it a contradiction to be paid by the very tax dollars from the government that you tell** 44 **people not to pay?**

45 **Question 4:** Are you sure you don't see the moral, ethical and legal problem in your being paid by the tax dollars of Americans  
46 who actually pay their taxes and your refusing to pay your own taxes and advocating that others not pay theirs?

47 **Answer 4:** The fallacy of that question is that I, as an employee of the Department of Defense, am actually paid by Subtitle  
48 A federal income taxes. In fact, I am not. For the first 180 years of this country, defense functions of this country  
49 were paid exclusively by federal excise taxes on imports and we didn't even have personal income taxes up until  
50 WW II, except during a very brief period of the Civil war as an emergency war measure enacted by President  
51 Lincoln! We believe ALL AMERICANS and EVERYONE working for the government should obey the law. Since  
52 both federal and state law clearly state that we *aren't liable* for Subtitle A federal income or state income taxes as

1 natural persons and that these taxes are voluntary for such persons, then there is no cause for any legal, moral, or  
 2 ethical problems with not volunteering. We devote an exhaustive amount of study in section of 1.12 of this book to  
 3 the subject of what would happen if the illegal enforcement of the Internal Revenue Code by the IRS were reformed  
 4 to be consistent with the code itself and the Constitution and if Congress came clean and told the general public the  
 5 truth about personal (Subtitle A) federal income taxes. To summarize the results of our detailed financial analysis  
 6 in that section:

- 7 1. State income tax revenues would be reduced.
- 8 2. Medicare and Medicaid payments would need to end.
- 9 3. Social security participation would become voluntary and persons could withdraw payment at any time subject  
 10 to the constraint that they would be able to collect benefits only based on what they put in and how much money  
 11 the government has to spend at the time they retire.
- 12 4. Federal revenues would be reduced by 41%. This would necessitate a requirement for the federal government  
 13 to ask the states for revenues directly and through apportionment as authorized by 1:9:4 and 1:2:3 of the U.S.  
 14 Constitution. States would be likely to severely limit what they gave the feds through apportionment and take  
 15 over a larger share of social services away from the federal government, thereby making state government more  
 16 important to the average person.
- 17 5. Congress would have to start getting much more fiscally responsible, because the budget would get much  
 18 tighter, and they would not be able to endlessly raise taxes to pay for increasing public debt, because most of  
 19 their tax revenues would come from corporate excise taxes on foreign commerce, which they would have little  
 20 control over.
- 21 6. Congress would have to stop its social engineering using the tax code because if people don't have to pay  
 22 Subtitle A personal income taxes, then they aren't going to do crazy things anymore just to earn the right to get  
 23 a tax deduction. Congressional meddling in the economy would be replaced once again by an entirely free  
 24 market based on capitalism. Keynesian economics and federal government meddling into our economy would  
 25 also be far less frequent, because the feds would have fewer resources with which to meddle.
- 26 7. There would be a significant change in the job market:  
 27 IRS staffing could be shrunk by probably 50%, because 50 percent of its revenues come from personal  
 28 income taxes.
  - 29 7.1. Tax preparers would need to find another line of work, since they would have nothing they could charge  
 30 for.
  - 31 7.2. Probably half of the lawyers in the country would need to find a decent and honorable line of work finally.  
 32 We wouldn't need probate attorneys, living trusts to escape taxes, tax shelters, or offshore bank accounts  
 33 or investments.
  - 34 7.3. There would be massive cuts in the accounting field, since it would suddenly be much simpler to comply  
 35 with all the laws and regulations regarding taxes.
  - 36 7.4. Companies would probably be able to lay off 2/3 of their payroll people, because this job function would  
 37 get much simpler without the need to deduct taxes.
- 38 8. The amount of money the federal government could borrow would be much less because its revenues would be  
 39 less. Just like individuals, your borrowing power depends on disposable income after making payment on  
 40 current debts.
- 41 9. There would be less partisanship in Congress, because there would be less money to fight about and fewer ways  
 42 to raise significantly more.
- 43 10. There would be a natural check on the size of federal government because most of federal revenue would come  
 44 from taxes on imports. If the government got too large and charged too much for import taxes, other countries  
 45 would be just as protective of their markets and our exports would go down. The system would naturally correct  
 46 itself.
- 47 11. Federal elections would cease to be a vehicle of economic equalization. For instance, there would no longer be  
 48 a financial incentive for older people to vote in congressmen and representatives who would perpetuate robbing  
 49 the rich or the young to give to the poor or old. This would eliminate the use of the government for class warfare  
 50 purposes, and would make politics far more objective and far less controversial.
- 51 12. Since the government would consume far less of the national income and very little personal income, federal  
 52 politics would become less relevant and state politics would become correspondingly more relevant for the  
 53 average American.
- 54 13. There would be far less reason for financial institutions to need or want a Social Security Number from  
 55 depositors, since very few profit generating investments would result in a federal tax liability.
- 56 14. Much greater individual freedom would be the result, as individuals (natural persons) would:
  - 57 14.1. Have 10% more disposable income per capita.

14.2. Be able to use the increase in their income to:

14.2.1. Donate more to their favorite charity or church (which would also help take care of those with medical expenses no longer covered by Medicare and Medicaid)

14.2.2. Put their children in private schools and get them away from the harmful effects of public schools.

14.2.3. Help their families, and especially older people in the family who need medical care (to replace Medicare and Medicaid).

14.3. Have ultimate privacy about their own financial affairs and would answer to no one.

14.4. No longer be required to incriminate themselves.

14.5. Have more autonomy, respect, and authority in their own families, because children would need to depend more on their parents and other family members for charity and help until they can get on their own two feet.

15. Legal effects:

15.1. Federal courts and judges would no longer derive their pay from income taxes paid by individuals, and therefore would no longer have the conflict of interest they currently do in attempting to illegally enforce a voluntary income tax against Americans. This would produce a more objective legal system.

15.2. Law schools would have to focus on lines of business other than taxation.

16. Business climate:

16.1. The rate of new business failures would go dramatically down. Income taxes are a big drain on most small businesses, and it is very difficult, especially when they are first starting up, to deal with all of the payroll, tax, insurance, and employee benefit drain on their income. A very high percentage of first-time businesses fail because the taxes are so high. However, if there were no income taxes, then their cash flow situation would be drastically improved and the complexity of managing their business would be reduced, which would give most businesses more time to focus on customer satisfaction, which would thereby improve their profits and viability.

16.2. The price of goods and services would go down probably 20-30%, because businesses would not have to build in so many taxes into the price of their products and services.

16.3. The profitability of most small businesses would go dramatically up.

16.4. Employees would have a lot more take home pay, so they would have more spendable income, which would really promote an expansion of the economy and a redirection of income away from inefficient government projects toward a more consumer-oriented mentality.

17. Family effects:

17.1. Many families who currently have two breadwinners would only need one. The wife could quit her job and take care of the children or elderly parents. The children would turn out better than before because they would get more attention and supervision

17.2. Divorce rates would go down because there would be less financial stress on the family and because the majority of divorces are caused by disputes over money or the lack of it.

17.3. More people would choose to home school their kids, resulting in a better educational system.

17.4. More parents could afford to take their children out of public schools and put them into private schools. This would create more competition for the public schools and raise their standards.

17.5. The more traditional model for families, where the man is the breadwinner, would be much more common than it is today, because much more families could afford to implement it without paying income taxes.

We believe that all of the above changes in our political system that would inevitably result from the changes in the tax system that we advocate would be not only positive, but highly desirable and long overdue. More importantly, the number of systemic conflicts of interest would be reduced as well, including:

- Voters could no longer be tempted to vote for politicians who promise tax dollars to their favorite pet project because there wouldn't be tax dollars available for pet projects anymore. See [Tax Deposition Questions, Section 5 on First Amendment, Family Guardian Fellowship](#), for some background on this subject.
- Federal judges would no longer be put in the awkward position of hearing tax trials while at the same time being beholden to the IRS and getting their paycheck from Subtitle A income taxes. Such a conflict of interest violates [28 U.S.C. §455](#). See our [Tax Deposition Questions, Section 8 on Courts are Closed](#), for some background on this subject.
- Americans would no longer be put into a conflicted state on the one hand thinking they have Constitutional rights, but on the other hand having those rights completely disregarded by the federal courts because of [28 U.S.C. §2201](#), which says that judges may not rule on rights or status regarding federal tax matters. See [Tax](#)

[Deposition Questions, Section 4 on Fifth Amendment, Family Guardian Fellowship](#), for some background on this subject.

- Congress would no longer be incentivized to run up big public debt and use it to bribe constituents for their votes. Remember, this public debt has to be paid off by unborn children at interest. That violates their rights and makes them financial slaves of the government in violation of [18 U.S.C. §1581](#), which prohibits slavery to pay off a debt, in this case to the Federal Reserve. It also represents taxation without representation, which is the very reason this country was founded. See our [Tax Deposition Questions, Section 2 on Right to Labor, Family Guardian Fellowship](#), for some background on this subject.
- The Congress, the Treasury, and the IRS would no longer be incentivized to obfuscate the tax code to deceive the average American into thinking that they owe taxes because they simply wouldn't. See our [Tax Deposition Questions, Section 9 on Ambiguity of Law, Family Guardian Fellowship](#), for some background on this subject.
- The growth of government and the encroachments of liberty this represents would be stopped because the food that keeps the beast alive would be reduced. America would return to being the Constitutional Republic (NOT DEMOCRACY, but REPUBLIC) that our founding fathers originally intended. It would become a beacon and light of freedom and liberty once again revered all around the world, rather than terrorized for its socialistic intervention in the affairs of other nations.

As we explain in section 1.11 of this book, even without the Subtitle A federal income tax, our federal government would easily be able to afford to support the core functions of government identified by the founding fathers in the Constitution on the budget that would remain after Subtitle A federal income taxes would be eliminated. As a matter of fact, our government did exactly that from 1776 all the way up to 1943. Certainly it can repeat this again. Core functions of government include:

- Courts
- Prisons
- Military
- Roads
- Coast Guard

#### 1.4.7.5 **Question 5: Do you have to quote the Bible so much?**

**Question 5:** Why do you have to quote the Bible so often in your books and your website? This offends me.

**Answer 5:** If you don't like God or the Bible, then this isn't the website for you! Use of our website and our books is a *privilege*, and not a *right*. Who are you to be looking a gift horse in the mouth? The only thing that educating and empowering ungrateful atheists and blasphemers like you accomplishes is to make them more vain. "*Knowledge puffs up, but love edifies.*" [1 Cor. 8:1](#). We don't want you benefiting from God's wisdom *without* believing in Him because that would be selfishness. "*For everyone to whom much [information] is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him they will ask the more.*" [Luke 12:48](#). Everyone has to serve someone and when there is *no God*, government or our own selfish hedonistic desires become our god. Christians describe this situation as idolatry, which is the worst kind of sin and is forbidden in [Exodus 20:1-11](#). This very attitude is behind liberal efforts to remove God from our schools and public places, as a matter of fact. Furthermore, we mention in section 4.4.5 that if you are selfishly looking at our materials to get more money for yourself rather than to spend *at least ten percent* of the money you make on charitable causes and the Lord's causes as the Bible requires in [Mal. 3:8](#), then you don't have our permission to use the materials on this website and have violated the user license and conditions of the copyright. Those who are selfish deserve to have a selfish government that lies to them and steals from them, because we should always reap what we sow. This is the golden rule:

*"Do unto others as you would have them do unto you."*  
[[Matt. 7:12.](#)]

Furthermore, even if we *do* donate 10% of our income to charitable causes, if we tell anyone what we gave or who we gave it to rather than doing it secretly, then we have violated [Matt. 6:1-4](#) and have a pride problem that will be our downfall eventually.

1                   *"Therefore, when you do a charitable deed, do not sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do in the*  
 2                   *synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.*  
 3                   *But when you do a charitable deed, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, that your*  
 4                   *charitable deed may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will Himself reward you openly."*  
 5                   *[Matt. 6:2, Bible, NKJV]*

#### 6   **1.4.7.6      Question 6: Aren't you endangering yourself by criticizing government?**

7   **Question 6:** The Bible, in Prov. 20:2 says *"The wrath of the king is like a roaring lion; Whoever provokes him to anger sins*  
 8                   *against his own life."* Because your website appears to mock many aspects of government behavior, it would appear  
 9                   to me that you violate that scripture and endanger your own safety by inviting the wrath of public officials.

10 **Answer 6:** In our country the PEOPLE, not the President or the Congress, are the sovereigns and therefore the kings in a  
 11                   biblical sense. The government and the Congress are their servants. Even our Supreme Court agrees with this  
 12                   notion.

13                   *"Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while*  
 14                   *sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by*  
 15                   *whom and for whom all government exists and acts."*  
 16                   *[Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356, 6 S.Ct. 1064 (1886)]*

17                   *"The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly*  
 18                   *belonged to the King by his prerogative. Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the powers*  
 19                   *which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone, or by him in conjunction*  
 20                   *with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution of this State*  
 21                   *or of the U.S."*  
 22                   *[Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89, 4 Wendel 9 (1829)]*

23                   The "king" has every right to do with his servants what he wishes. They are his "property" and his stewardship  
 24                   alone and he is answerable only to God for what he does as the sovereign. On this website and in this book, we  
 25                   rebuke unlawful and therefore evil BEHAVIOR rather than evil people. To condemn and legally prosecute their  
 26                   harmful and illegal actions is to pursue justice against our collective servants, that is our public servants. It is indeed  
 27                   ludicrous to suggest that corrupted and criminal servants in government are the only ones who can pursue or enforce  
 28                   justice and that the sovereigns are not empowered directly to do so if the servants have neglected their stewardship  
 29                   and attempted to take over the house. Here is what the Bible says our duty is as the sovereign when a servant gets  
 30                   out of line:

31                   *"But if that servant says in his heart 'My master is delaying his coming,' and begins to beat the male and female*  
 32                   *servants, and to eat and drink and be drunk, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking*  
 33                   *for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the*  
 34                   *unbelievers. And that servant who knew his master's will, and did not prepare himself or do according to his*  
 35                   *will, shall be beaten with many stripes."*  
 36                   *[Luke 12:45-47, Bible, NKJV]*

37                   Trusting lawyers to police themselves or be honest and honorable is a recipe for disaster and tyranny. Does anyone  
 38                   like or even trust lawyers these days? All they are interested in is money and power, and they have enslaved most  
 39                   of our culture with their greed and sophistry:

40                   *"The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; He will exalt the law and make it honorable. But this is*  
 41                   *a people robbed and plundered! [by the IRS] All of them are snared in [legal] holes [by the sophistry of greedy*  
 42                   *IRS lawyers], and they are hidden in prison houses; they are for prey, and no one delivers; for plunder, and*  
 43                   *no one says, "Restore!"*

44                   *Who among you will give ear to this? Who will listen and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for*  
 45                   *plunder, and Israel to the robbers? [IRS] Was it not the Lord, He against whom we have sinned? For they*  
 46                   *would not walk in His ways, nor were they obedient to His law, therefore He has poured on him the fury of His*  
 47                   *anger and the strength of battle; it has set him on fire all around, yet he did not know; and it burned him, yet he*  
 48                   *did not take it to heart."*  
 49                   *[Isaiah 42:21-25, Bible, NKJV]*

50                   If these arrogant and covetous public servants who occupy public offices today really were the "king", then you  
 51                   would be right, but they aren't. They want to deceive everyone into believing that they are the king, but this simply  
 52                   is not the case: you and I are!

1 On the other hand, Proverbs 21:7 says:

2 *"The violence of the wicked will destroy them because they refuse to do justice."*  
3 [\[Prov. 21:7\]](#)

4 Justice in America for our public *servants* is to remind them that they are precisely that: *servants*. We explain very  
5 clearly in sections 2.1, 2.2 and 4.1 of this book that the law imposes on our public servants and public officials a  
6 "fiduciary relationship" in relation to us as the sovereigns, and that this relationship imposes the highest standard of  
7 care under law. If they exceed their delegated authority and thereby act unlawfully, then we have a duty as the  
8 sovereigns to rebuke and punish this sin or eventually we will be destroyed by their violence because we refuse to  
9 do justice as God's law requires.

10 For those of you in government inclined to want to shoot the messenger and your fellow coworker (me) rather than  
11 heed the message, I'd like to remind you that it is ILLEGAL and a "[prohibited personnel practice](#)" to discriminate  
12 against whistleblowers who expose federal corruption and/or violation of law under [5 U.S.C. §2302\(b\)\(8\)](#). Any  
13 person who engages in such illegal activities may be subject to criminal prosecution and dismissal from federal  
14 government service. Those persons who might feel inclined to contact my employer or institute disciplinary action  
15 against me for anything on this website, which collectively are a reflection of my *religious and political views*, is  
16 engaged in a "[prohibited personnel practice](#)" as legally defined.

#### 17 **1.4.7.7 Question 7: How come I can't select or copy text from the electronic version of this document?**

18 The content of this document when in Adobe Acrobat form is *copy protected*. We do this deliberately to prevent violations  
19 of the copyright and more importantly, to prevent people from misusing, abusing, or censoring any portion of this document.  
20 There are persons who don't like its religious content and want to censor it out, which we will not allow. We also don't want  
21 editable versions of our document getting into the hands of persons intent on plagiarizing it or worst yet, restricting its  
22 audience by charging for it. This protection has the effect of:

- 23 1. Guaranteeing our First Amendment right of free speech.
- 24 2. Preventing those who would slander us from distorting or corrupting our message.
- 25 3. Preventing profiteers and snake-oil artists from plagiarizing our work and charging for it.
- 26 4. Making the audience for the document as large as possible by ensuring that it is ALWAYS free.

27 Large portions of this book, however, are available in editable electronic form on our website in the [Sovereignty Forms and](#)  
28 [Instructions Online](#), Form #10.004, including all of chapters 6 and 8.

#### 29 **1.4.7.8 Question 8: I'm afraid to act on the contents of this book. What should I do?**

30 **Question 10:** I'm so afraid to stop paying taxes and what the government might do to me. I would feel much better if I could  
31 sit back and wait until there is a perfect method that always works and involves no risk. What should I do?

32 **Answer 10:** People who ask this question think that there is some possibility that they can get our deceitful politicians to tell  
33 them the truth so that they don't have to take risks in order to follow what we so clearly show on this website is the  
34 law regarding income taxes. Well, I've got some disappointing news for you, folks, and please don't shoot the  
35 messenger:

36 1. If you wait and hold your breath for the government to one day magically admit that they have been STEALING  
37 from you all these years and that they ought to pay all of the money back to you that they stole, *you will be waiting*  
38 *until hell literally freezes over!* Think about the liability, the litigation, and the downright violence and civil anarchy  
39 that might result after people found out the truth from the government's own formal admission? There is absolutely  
40 nothing to gain and everything to lose for the average politician to tell the truth about this fraud. Do you think there  
41 is even one politician honest enough to risk upsetting the apple cart and causing the biggest meltdown and civil  
42 unrest this country has ever seen?

43 2. There will NEVER be a risk-free way to follow the laws on taxation. Are you listening? Read my lips again.  
44 There will NEVER be a risk-free way to follow the laws on taxation, or to live, for that matter. The whole point of  
45 the corrupt system that our lawyer-politicians have engineered over the last 80 years since they fraudulently ratified



1 the 16th Amendment in 1913 is to make it so complicated, exasperating, and troublesome to hold on to the money  
 2 you earned that you will just give it up without a fight. There is a name for that, and it is called ORGANIZED  
 3 EXTORTION and RACKETEERING and it is illegal (see [18 U.S.C. §872](#) and [18 U.S.C. §225](#)) and morally wrong.  
 4 Who else but a lawyer would know better that he is a criminal and want to hide it? The only way they can steal your  
 5 money is hold a loaded gun in your back. That gun is loaded with lies and silence about the truth and what makes  
 6 you think that the gun is real is the illegal duress they apply and publicize in the form of "Notice of liens", "Notice  
 7 of levies", fraudulent calls to employers, anonymous letters claiming they have authority when in fact they do not,  
 8 and downright fraudulent IRS publications. The IRS and the Congress benefit too much financially from the lies to  
 9 ever tell the truth or fix the problems they will try to get you to believe were just a product of incompetence and  
 10 massive bureaucracy.

11 3. If money is your security blanket instead of God, doing justice, and loving your neighbor. If you would rather  
 12 look the other way while our government rapes and pillages and enslaves your neighbor, then you are worshipping  
 13 the false god of money and government, and this is idolatry in violation of the First commandment to love your God  
 14 with all your heart, mind, and soul (see Exodus 20:1-11).

15 *"Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it*  
 16 *is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."*  
 17 *[Matt. 19:23-24, Bible, NKJV]*

18 You are joined at the hip to Babylon the Great Harlot described in the Book of Revelation. You sold out. This is  
 19 not a complicated issue and this is no time for excuses. You are a moral and a spiritual whore and harlot. Everyone  
 20 has a price to sell out and your price just happens to be a little higher than the average druggie street bum. Face the  
 21 reality and the truth and prepare for hell later on, because that will probably be your reward. Either you believe God  
 22 and follow his commandments and recognize His word as absolute (not relative) moral truth, or you are a hypocrite  
 23 and a fraud. It's as simple as that, and God doesn't like hypocrites (Matt. 23:13-17; Matt. 5:20).

24 *"If you love me, keep My commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that*  
 25 *He may abide with you forever—the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him*  
 26 *nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you."*  
 27 *[John 14:15-17, Bible, NKJV]*

28 If you love God and evidence that faith through consistent obedience to [His Law](#), then you have satisfied the greatest  
 29 commandment to love God. It's as simple as that. Any other approach is just politically correct tripe designed to  
 30 give you a false sense of self-esteem, and we hear a lot of that coming from the pulpit in this deluded age. See Isaiah  
 31 30:1-3 and 8-14. We as a race are all rebellious children of God who need to be more obedient to Him and when we  
 32 aren't, He disciplines and chastises us for that disobedience using a sinister, evil, and deceptive IRS.

33 *"The violence of the wicked will destroy them because they refuse to do justice."*  
 34 *[Prov. 21:7, Bible, NKJV]*

35 4. The source of your fear comes from two things: 1. Ignorance; 2. The lack of God's spirit and His love in your  
 36 life. The antidote for the first cause is education and the antidote for the second is faith and having a personal  
 37 relationship with God. There is a more than adequate amount of materials on our website to get you educated about  
 38 what you are facing, more than any other source on the subject anywhere on the internet that we have found, so  
 39 ignorance can't be a legitimate excuse for your fear. Those same materials are copiously peppered with God's word  
 40 throughout so that you can get to know God and what He expects out of you. The only thing you have to add to that  
 41 is your own discipline and effort.

42 *"Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many*  
 43 *who go in by it. Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who*  
 44 *find it."*  
 45 *[Matt. 7:13-14, Bible, NKJV]*

46 As Franklin Delano Roosevelt liked to say: "The only thing we have to fear is fear itself." If you fail, it will not be  
 47 because of your environment or the fact that the devil or a serpent made you do it. In most cases, it will be because  
 48 of your own laziness and apathy. People like that are called "lukewarm Christians" and Jesus said he spits them out  
 49 of his mouth!:

50 *"So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth."*

1 [Rev. 3:16, Bible, NKJV]

2 Laziness and apathy are what we are all fighting. If you can conquer this, God will call you a worthy steward and  
3 bless you abundantly (see Luke 12:41-18).

4 5. "But I need someone to hold my hand. I can't do this on my own." you say? Well, as we say in our [Contact us](#)  
5 [page](#):

- 6 1. Freedom is not a spectator sport;  
7 2. You can't have liberty without personal responsibility.

8 Depending on anyone but yourself to defend your freedom is slavery. Pestering and bothering us incessantly to take  
9 responsibility for personal problems that you yourself refuse to take personal responsibility for is nothing but  
10 hypocrisy. It also hurts our own efforts to take responsibility for ourselves and deprives us of the time we need to  
11 help a broader audience by improving the materials and tools that everyone uses on this website. There is a cost for  
12 everything. Calling us and asking us to solve your problems makes us into a hypocrite, because we have to give you  
13 favoritism that there aren't enough hours in the day for one man to give to the other hundreds of thousands of readers  
14 of this website. Please don't make us into a hypocrite or force us to explain why we had to help you but then didn't  
15 have the time to help the other 200,000 people who wanted similar treatment FOR FREE. We have a life too and  
16 want you to respect our sovereignty just like you want the government to respect your sovereignty.

17 The only thing we can guarantee is that there will always be someone out there who wants to take advantage of you,  
18 and if you choose to be ignorant and dependent on others for your liberty, then you are a slave. Plain and simple.  
19 You are a slave to your own ignorance and apathy, and the government, who is the wolf in sheep's clothing, is  
20 counting on the fact that you will be thinking this way because that is how they shear the sheep and make lamb  
21 chops. Prepare for the slaughter. I'm sorry, but this is the real world folks and the naked truth that you should have  
22 learned in our defective public education system. Please don't shoot the messenger, but grow wiser and use what  
23 you have learned to help your fellow men. Gang up on this problem and form study groups in your area to help each  
24 other. One man simply cannot do all. Jesus tried to do that and look what they did to Him!

25 "If a nation expects to be ignorant and free... it expects what never was and never will be."  
26 [Thomas Jefferson]

27 The gift of liberty is the greatest earthly gift you can bestow on any man, second perhaps only to that of salvation  
28 and faith in God. That is the focus of this website, and we do it by educating you and teaching you how to fish. We  
29 aren't, however, the fish supplier. You have to catch your own fish.

30 All of our materials are based on the word of God, and God says we should trust Him:

31 "Trust in the Lord with all your heart. And lean not on your own understanding [or your own feelings]; In all  
32 your ways acknowledge Him [not just in the ways that FEEL good or are politically correct], and He [not the  
33 winds of public opinion] shall direct your paths."  
34 [Prov. 3:5, Bible, NKJV]

35 [OBSERVATION: You can't trust the Lord with all your heart if you are focused on riches and materialism. See  
36 Matt. 6:19-21]

37 You may have to travel a few [dirt roads](#) before you develop the character necessary to appreciate this advice, but  
38 you'll be glad you did later. :-)

39 If you are looking for inspiration, please read our [The God Memorandum, Og Mandino](#), which is a very powerful  
40 motivator that we read often. Good luck, and our prayers and sympathies are with you as you stretch your wings  
41 and learn to fly.

42 "Eagles fly high above the clouds but they fly alone."  
43 [Family Guardian Fellowship]

## 44 1.5 Who Is Really Liable for the Income Tax?

1 The only code section in all the Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code that makes any entity liable to pay a tax on income  
2 is Internal Revenue Code (IRC) section 1461 which states:

3 *"Every person required to deduct and withhold any tax under this chapter is hereby made liable for such tax..."*  
4 *[26 U.S.C. §1461]*

5 And who is this "any person" that Congress made liable to "deduct" and "withhold"? I.R.C. Section 7701(a)(16) defines this  
6 person as the "withholding agent", who is"

7 *"..required to deduct and withhold any tax under the provisions and sections 1441, 1442, and 1443."*

8 So one looks up those three code sections and sees that code section 1441 applies to nonresident aliens, code section 1442  
9 applies to foreign corporations, and code section 1443 applies to certain foreign tax-exempt organizations under IRC 1443.  
10 The astonishing truth is that subtitle A imposes the liability for the payment of "income" taxes on earnings of foreigners and  
11 of STATUTORY U.S. Citizens working in a foreign country that has a current tax treaty with the United States and earning  
12 over the \$76,000 annual exclusion.

13 The Supreme Court in their 1924 decision *Cook v. Tait* ruled that Congress has the power to tax the "income" received by a  
14 STATUTORY Citizen of the United States domiciled abroad from property situated abroad and that the constitutional  
15 prohibition of unapportioned direct taxes within the states of the union does not apply in foreign countries.

16 ***There is no code section in all of Subtitle A, or anywhere else in the entire Internal Revenue Code for that matter, that***  
17 ***makes the American national earning his or her living exclusively within the states of the Union liable for a tax on his or***  
18 ***her own income. Period It simply doesn't exist!***

19 With today's computers which can hold the entire Internal Revenue code on a single CD-ROM, it's a simple matter to search  
20 for any and all occurrences of such words as "Citizen" and "income" throughout the entire Internal Revenue code, let alone  
21 just subtitle A. And, sure enough, the code section imposing a liability on a U.S. citizen for a tax on income when working  
22 within the States of the Union is just not there.

23 As further proof, the index for the Internal Revenue Code has no listing for the liability of Citizens, unless that income is  
24 from insular island possessions. Check this out for yourself. Go to the index in the front of the code and look up the phrase  
25 "Liability for tax". You will not find income tax anywhere!

## 26 **1.6 Amazing Facts About the Income Tax**

27 **FACT #1:** Our Founding Fathers created a constitutional REPUBLIC as our form of government. The Constitution gives  
28 the federal/national government limited powers. ALL powers not delegated to the United States are reserved to the States  
29 respectively or to the People. The Union was created to be the servant of the people! The United States Constitution is the  
30 **SUPREME LAW** of the land. (Article VI, Clause 2.)

31 **FACT #2:** The Constitution gives the Congress the power to lay and collect taxes to pay the debts of the government. Provide  
32 for the common defense and general welfare of the United States subject to the following rules pertaining only to the two  
33 classes of taxation permitted.

- 34 1. DIRECT TAXES, which are subject to the rule of apportionment among the states of the Union.  
35 2. INDIRECT TAXES -- imposts, duties and excises, subject to the rule of uniformity.

36 **FACT #3:** The government does not allow either one of the two classifications to tax CITIZENS or PERMANENT  
37 RESIDENT ALIENS of the United States of America, DIRECTLY. The intent of the Founders was to keep the government  
38 the servant and to prevent it from becoming the master. (See Article 1, section 2, clause 3 of the U.S. Constitution.)

<sup>2</sup> <http://www.taxtruth4u.com/10k.html>

1 **FACT #4:** The CENSUS is taken every ten (10) years to determine the number of representatives to be allotted to each State  
2 and the amount of a direct tax that may be apportioned to each State. This is determined by the percentage its number of  
3 representatives bears to the total membership in the House of Representatives. (Article 1, section 2, clause 3; Article 1, section  
4 9, clause 4.)

5 **FACT #5:** It was established in the Constitutional Convention of 1787 that the supreme Court of the United States would  
6 have the power of "judicial review". Which is the power to declare laws passed by the U.S. Congress to be null and void if  
7 such a law or laws was/were in violation of the Constitution. This was to be determined from the original intent as found in  
8 Madison's Notes recorded during the Convention, the Federalist Papers, and the ratifying conventions found in Elliott's  
9 Debates.

10 **FACT #6:** Due to the characteristics of the SECOND CLASSIFICATION of taxation, the Supreme Court called it an indirect  
11 tax and it is divided into three distinct taxes: IMPOSTS, DUTIES, and EXCISES. These taxes were intended to provide for  
12 the operating expenses of the government of the United States. (See Article 1, Section 8, Clause 1.)

13 **FACT #7:** Duties and imposts are taxes laid by government on things imported into the country from abroad, and are paid  
14 at the ports of entry.

15 **FACT #8:** The supreme Court says that excises are...taxes laid upon the manufacture, sale or consumption of commodities  
16 within the country, upon licenses to pursue certain occupations and upon corporate privileges. (See Flint v. Stone Tracy Co.,  
17 220 U.S. 107 (1911))

18 **FACT #9:** In 1862, Congress passed an Act (law) to create an "Income Duty" to help pay for the War Between the States. A  
19 duty is an indirect tax, which the federal government cannot impose on citizens or residents of a State having sources of  
20 income within a state of the Union.

21 **FACT #10:** Congress passed an Act in 1894 to impose a tax on the incomes of citizens and resident aliens of the United  
22 States (the Federal Zone, NOT the United States of America, which is clarified in Section 4.5.3). The constitutionality of the  
23 Act was challenged in 1895 and the Supreme Court said the law was **Unconstitutional** when applied within the boundaries  
24 of the 50 Union states because it was a DIRECT TAX that was not apportioned as the Constitution required (See Pollock v.  
25 Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (1895).)

26 **FACT #11:** In 1913 the 16<sup>th</sup> Amendment to the Constitution that was allegedly ratified by 3/4 of the States; it is known as  
27 "The Income Tax Amendment". However, in a book called *The Law That Never Was*, Bill Benson presents exhaustive  
28 evidence which refutes the claim that this amendment was ever ratified. (see <http://www.thelawthatneverwas.com/>)

29 **FACT #12:** Some officials within the Internal Revenue "Service," along with professors, teachers, politicians and some  
30 judges, have said and are saying, that the 16th Amendment changed the United States Constitution to allow a DIRECT tax  
31 without apportionment.

32 **FACT #13:** The above persons are not empowered to interpret the meaning of the United States Constitution! As stated  
33 above (Fact #5), this power is granted by the Constitution to the Supreme Court, but limited to the original intent. The  
34 Supreme Court has no power to function as a "social engineer" to amend or alter the Constitution as they have been doing. A  
35 change or "amendment " can only be lawfully done according to the provisions of Article 5 of that document.

36 **FACT #14:** The U.S. Supreme Court said in 1916 that the 16th Amendment did not change the U.S. Constitution because of  
37 the fact that Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3, and Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4, were not repealed or altered; the U.S.  
38 Constitution cannot conflict with itself. The Court also said that the 16th Amendment merely prevented the "income duty"

1 from being taken out of the category of INDIRECT taxation. (See *Brushaber v. Union Pacific Railroad Co.*, 240 U.S. 1  
2 (1916), page 16.)

3 **FACT #15:** After the Supreme Court decision, the office of the Commissioner of Internal Revenue issued Treasury Decision  
4 [Order] 2313 (dated March 21, 1916; Vol. 18, January-December, 1916, page 53.) It states in part; "...it is hereby held that  
5 income accruing to nonresident aliens in the form of interest from the bonds and dividends on the stock of domestic change  
6 corporations is subject to the income tax imposed by the act of October 3, 1913."

7 **FACT #16:** In another Supreme Court decision in 1916, the Court, in clear language settled the application of the 16th  
8 Amendment. By the previous ruling [Brushaber] it was settled that the provisions of the Sixteenth conferred no new power  
9 of taxation. Rather it simply prohibited the previous complete and plenary [full] power of income taxation possessed by  
10 Congress from the beginning from being taken out of the category of indirect taxation to which it inherently belonged... (See  
11 *Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co.*, 240 U.S. 103 (1916))

12 **FACT #17:** The United States Constitution gives the federal government the exclusive authority to handle foreign affairs.  
13 Congress has the power to pass laws concerning the direct or indirect taxation of foreigners doing business in the U.S. of A.  
14 It has possessed this power from the beginning, needing no "amendment" (change) to the U.S. Constitution to authorize the  
15 exercise of it.

16 **FACT #18:** The DIRECT classification of taxation was intended for use when unforeseen expenses or emergencies arose.  
17 Congress, needing funds to meet the emergency, can borrow money on the credit of the United States (Article 1, section 8,  
18 clause 2). The Founding Fathers intended that the budget of the United States be balanced and a deficit be paid off quickly  
19 and in an orderly fashion. Through a DIRECT tax, the tax bill is given to the States of the Union. The bill is "apportioned"  
20 by the number of Representatives of each State in Congress; therefore, each State is billed its apportioned share of the  
21 DIRECT tax equal to the number of votes its Representatives could employ to pass the tax. How the States raise the money  
22 to pay the bill is not a federal concern (Article 1, section 2, and clause 3).

23 **FACT #19:** In the *Brushaber* and *Stanton* cases, the Supreme Court said the 16th Amendment did not change income taxes  
24 to another classification. So, if the INCOME TAX is an indirect EXCISE tax, then how is it applied and collected? According  
25 to the Supreme Court, "Excises are taxes laid upon the manufacture, sale or consumption of commodities within the country,  
26 upon licenses to pursue certain occupations and upon corporate privileges; the requirement to pay such taxes involves the  
27 exercise of the privilege and if business is not done in the manner described no tax is payable...it is the privilege which is the  
28 subject of the tax and not the mere buying, selling or handling of goods." (*Flint v. Stone Tracy Co.*, 220 U.S. 107 (1911).)

29 QUESTION: If all RIGHTS come from GOD (citizens of the States retained all RIGHTS except those surrendered as  
30 enumerated in the United States Constitution), and PRIVILEGES are granted by government after application; THEN what  
31 is the PRIVILEGE that the "income tax" is applied against?

32 ANSWER: As established in the U.S. Constitution, the federal government cannot directly tax a Citizen living within the  
33 States of the Union. Citizens possess RIGHTS; these rights cannot be converted to PRIVILEGES by government. The only  
34 individuals who would not have these RIGHTS and liable to regulation by government are NONRESIDENT ALIENS doing  
35 business and working within the federal United States or receiving domestic source profits from investments, and federal  
36 United States citizens (born in federal territories) working in a foreign country and taxable under TREATIES between the  
37 two governments.

38 **FACT #20:** WITHHOLDING AGENTS withhold income taxes. The only section in the Internal Revenue Code that defines  
39 this authority is I.R.C. section 7701(a)(16).

40 **FACT #21:** Withholding of money for income tax purposes, according to section 7701(a)(16), is only authorized for sections:  
41 1441 - NONRESIDENT ALIENS, 1442 - FOREIGN CORPORATIONS, 1443 - FOREIGN TAX-EXEMPT  
42 ORGANIZATIONS, 1461 - WITHHOLDING AGENT LIABLE FOR WITHHELD TAX.

1 **FACT #22:** Internal Revenue Manual Chapter 1100 Organization and Staffing, section 1132.75 states: The Criminal  
2 Investigation Division enforces the criminal statutes applicable to income, estate, gift, employment, and excise tax statutes  
3 involving United States citizens residing in foreign countries and nonresident aliens subject to Federal income tax filing  
4 requirements...

5 **FACT #23:** The implementation of IRS Treasury Regulation 1.1441-5 is explained in IRS Publication 515 on page 2, that  
6 "If an individual gives you [the domestic employer or withholding agent] a written statement, in duplicate, stating that he or  
7 she is a Citizen or resident of the United States, and you do not know otherwise, you may accept this statement and are  
8 relieved from the duty of withholding the tax.

9 **FACT #24:** The ONLY way a United States Citizen or permanent resident alien, living and working within a state of the  
10 Union can have taxes deducted from his/her pay, is by voluntarily making an application Form SS-5 to obtain a Social Security  
11 Number. Then by entering that number on an IRS Form W-4 and signing it to permit withholding of "Employment Taxes" -  
12 - "Form W-4 Employee's Withholding Allowance Certificate" (emphasis added). That is why the IRS pressures children to  
13 apply for a Social Security Numbers, and for employers to obtain the voluntary execution of Form W-4 immediately from all  
14 those being hired. However, no federal law or regulation requires workers to have a Social Security Number or sign a Form  
15 W-4 to qualify for a job.

16 **FACT #25:** Karl Marx wrote in his COMMUNIST MANIFESTO, ten planks needed to create a COMMUNIST state. The  
17 SECOND PLANK is A HEAVY OR PROGRESSIVE INCOME TAX, second only to the ABOLITION OF PRIVATE  
18 PROPERTY.

19 **FACT #26:** The attorney who [in Pollock v. Farmers' Loan and Trust Company, 157 U.S. 429, 158 U.S. 601] successfully  
20 challenged the Income Tax Act of 1894, Joseph H. Choate, recognized the communist hand in the shadows. He told the  
21 United States Supreme Court, "*The act of Congress which we are impugning [challenging as false] before you is communistic*  
22 *in its purposes and tendencies, and is defended here upon principles as communistic, socialistic -- what shall I call them --*  
23 *populistic as ever have been addressed to any political assembly in the world*".

24 **FACT #27:** The Supreme Court agreed; and Mr. Justice Field wrote the Court's opinion, concluding with these statements  
25 in intensity and bitterness. Prophetic words: "Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity  
26 that go down to the very foundations of the government. If the provisions of the Constitution can be set aside by an act of  
27 Congress, where is the course of usurpation to end? The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the  
28 stepping-stone to others, larger and more sweeping, till our political contests will become a war of the poor against the rich;  
29 a war growing."

### 30 **NEED WE SAY MORE?**

31 IRS contends the success of the SELF-ASSESSMENT system depends on VOLUNTARY COMPLIANCE -- EVIDENTLY  
32 SO! Just how much of the Communist Manifesto has become part of your daily life?

### 33 **CONCLUSION OF FACTS:**

34 All RIGHTS come from GOD: the United States Government can only exercise powers given to it by We The People through  
35 the U.S. Constitution; the "income tax" is an INDIRECT TAX; there is NO section of law in the Internal Revenue Code (Title  
36 26 U.S.C.) making a CITIZEN or a RESIDENT working and living WITHIN A STATE OF THE \*UNION, LIABLE to pay  
37 the INCOME (indirect/excise/duty) TAX.

38 TIRED OF BEING CONNED & RAILROADED INTO PAYING TAXES WHICH YOU DO NOT OWE, TO BE  
39 SQUANDERED BY ARROGANT BUREAUCRATS?

40 You are invited to join in a national Fellowship with other Patriotic Americans whose only goal is to LEARN, REVIVE and  
41 PRESERVE our UNITED STATES CONSTITUTION. The SAVE-A-PATRIOT FELLOWSHIP was founded to disarm the

1 IRS of its only actual weapon: FEAR and YOUR MONEY. By standing together, we can force these bureaucrats back  
2 within the confines of THE LAW...and arrest the wild rush toward PERPETURAL DEBT and TOTALITARIAN  
3 SOCIALIST GOVERNMENT in AMERICA.

4 You can serve your country and NOT FEAR reprisals from bureaucratic THUGS. The EDUCATION and INSURANCE-  
5 LIKE PROTECTION provided by the SAVE-A-PATRIOT FELLOWSHIP has been a constant thorn in the side of the IRS  
6 since 1984. Come join with others, who have learned how to combat the true TAX CRIMINALS!

7 Write or call us for a free copy of our membership newsletter Reasonable Action and application, TODAY!

8 Save-A-Patriot Fellowship  
9 P.O. Box 91  
10 Westminster, MD 21158  
11 TEL: (410) 857-4441  
12 FAX: (410) 857-5249  
13 BBS: (410) 857-4455  
14 <http://www.save-a-patriot.org/>

### 15 **1.7 So if most Americans don't need to pay income tax, how could so many people be fooled for so long?**

16 Many people are incredulous when they learn that income tax is voluntary for Americans living in the 50 Union states who  
17 have income from within the states. They simply can't believe that they and the entire system of lawyers, tax attorneys,  
18 accountants, informed Americans, politicians, and bureaucrats could be so deceived or ignorant about the income tax. "How  
19 could this be? I don't believe it!" they often say. "Surely, this would have been settled by the supreme court already" they  
20 frequently say. We would like to argue that there is a conspiracy going on, and it is found in the deliberate ambiguity of the  
21 tax code, and in particular, in sections 5.12 through 5.12.3 later. Below are a few possible reasons why the word hasn't yet  
22 gotten out to the average American that he or she doesn't owe income tax:

- 23 1. World War I started officially in 1916 and ended in 1918. The U.S. Government was desperately in need of revenues  
24 to fight the war. That was near the time in 1913 when the 16th Amendment was allegedly ratified. The Federal Reserve  
25 was also started the same year, in 1913. People and states were afraid America would lose the war or not be prepared to  
26 fight it. Congress was expanding the armed forces and patriotic Americans didn't mind paying an income tax, even if  
27 they didn't legally have to, because that was the only way we could win the war. Unfortunately, the income tax wasn't  
28 eliminated after the war, and greedy politicians not only kept the income tax, but tried to expand the income tax to make  
29 it even more confiscatory and communist in its application (progressive, as they say today, where to use Karl Marx  
30 statement "from each according to his ability, to each according to his need.>"). However, even to this day, the IRS  
31 continues to refer to the income tax as a system of "voluntary compliance", which simply means that one does not have  
32 to pay it if one does not wish to.
- 33 2. World War II occurred from about 1938 to 1945. During this time, the Employment tax was instituted and it was a  
34 voluntary continuation of the self-imposed Victory Tax initiated in 1942 for the war effort. Patriotic citizens voluntarily  
35 paid income tax even though they didn't legally have to in order to bolster the war effort, because their very existence  
36 was threatened. Even to this day, the Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle C, chapter 24 refers to the requirement to deduct  
37 Employment taxes, which are really voluntary taxes on income that are refundable and need not be deducted.
- 38 3. Decades after all the wars are over and the need to pay income taxes is long gone, the borrow and spend bureaucrats in  
39 Washington, D.C. and the IRS continue to want to extort your money out of you using your own ignorance as a weapon  
40 so badly, that they won't tell you the truth or print it in clearly in any of the IRS literature. "Caveat emptor" very much  
41 applies here, because looking out for number one is the only way you will learn of this Great Deception. Not only do  
42 they not want you to know, they also repealed one of the only remnant ways that you could find out, when they repealed  
43 26 C.F.R. §1.1441-5 in January 1999 (could they be getting wise to the patriot movement and to this document?), which  
44 said that citizens who had income from sources in the United States were not subject to income tax.
- 45 4. Tax attorneys and tax preparers would be out of business or would see their business base erode considerably if they  
46 were honest about telling their individual clients that they need not pay income taxes.
- 47 5. The federal government has attempted to illegally tax citizens with direct income tax many times throughout history.  
48 The constitution, however, was resistant to such abuse, even after passage of the 16th Amendment (which as we said  
49 before was really a non-amendment as far as the Supreme Court was concerned). What changed things and allowed the  
50 unlawful seizure of individual income was the absolute power granted to the IRS to terrorize the citizenry in blatant  
51 violation of the law, in order to extort revenue involuntarily from them. Everyone knows that the IRS operates more as

- a socialist gestapo organization than a government bureaucracy constrained by the balance of power found in the constitution, the force of law, or the requirement for due process guaranteed by the 14th Amendment to the Constitution.
6. Citizens filing returns (notice we didn't say taxpayers, because most citizens pay tax even though they don't have to) who point out the obvious fact that "the emperor has no clothes" with respect to the income tax issue will be targeted for an audit and harassment by the IRS as retribution. This is a very common occurrence for patriot organizations such as Inform America and the Save-A-Patriot Fellowship. The IRS has to use fear and intimidation to make an example out of troublemakers who spread the truth in order to keep the passive flock of sheep in line and prevent a revolt. Such Fear, Uncertainty, and Doubt (FUD) tactics keep the general populace from hearing the truth.
7. If the U.S. Government told the citizens the truth: that they didn't have to pay income taxes, they would be saddled with large debts for Social Security retirement and the national debt which they could not repay. This would destroy the credit rating of the United States. Therefore, for the good of the country and because it would be extremely difficult to modify the constitution to accommodate income taxes, they have to rely on keeping you ignorant and using terrorism by the IRS to keep you paying "tribute to the king". **Wasn't oppressive taxes of the colonies one of the BIG reasons why we had a revolutionary war to begin with and declared independence from England? Why aren't there any patriots left who will defend our liberties at all costs? Where is the A.C.L.U. when you need them? They are awfully proficient at kicking God out of everyplace but when it comes to protecting our foundational liberties, they are silent. HYPOCRITES!**

While this document proves with the law itself the limited nature of the federal "income tax," some obvious, basic questions will arise in the minds of most readers.

- "If my income isn't taxable, how could my tax-preparer not know it?"
- "What kind of massive conspiracy would it take to keep such an enormous deception secret, and for so long?"

Such questions are irrelevant to the actual evidence presented. Nonetheless, they cause mental obstacles which stop many people from even considering the possibility that the evidence proves what it appears to prove. Therefore, they will be addressed briefly here to give readers a good reason to continue on and finish this entire book.

Questions about who knows what, and about human intentions, necessarily require an amount of theorizing (as opposed to a study of the actual words in the law itself). My conclusions at present are based on my own experiences with IRS employees, tax professionals, and others, as well as second-hand accounts which I consider reliable.

In any field of thought, it is very easy for false assumptions to be self-perpetuating. For example, for years scientists searched for a *substance* responsible for the phenomenon called "heat." We now know there is no such substance as heat. For years doctors tried to perfect blood-letting, which killed many people but was superstitiously thought to have positive health effects. For hundreds of years, people believed that the world was flat, and anyone who reached any other conclusion was thought to be a heretic. Now the whole world is full of "heretics"! Suggestions that the "experts" in any field are missing something fundamental are usually greeted with ridicule by those "experts." The idea that little creatures too small to see ("germs") were making people sick was considered absurd. The idea that the earth is a sphere revolving around the sun was ridiculed. Traveling faster than the speed of sound was long considered a physical impossibility.

These obstacles to human understanding are due in large part to the fact that only very rarely does an individual begin to study a certain subject without preconceived assumptions (whether incorrect or correct). The same is true of tax professionals today. The possibility is very slim that anyone in America over the past half century received training to become a tax professional *without* being told that most income is taxable. Instead, they started with a false assumption (which they had before they had the slightest idea of what the law actually said), and then perhaps studied details in the law about deductions, exemptions, etc.

When an assumption is strong enough, an enormous amount of direct evidence contradicting that assumption can be dismissed by an individual. Perhaps the individual simply assumes that the evidence was somehow misunderstood. Or perhaps the individual simply ignores whatever does not match the preconceived ideas. The human mind is very resourceful when it comes to manipulating the physical evidence to match a preconceived conclusion. A scientist might simply throw out some result which contradicts the bulk of his findings, and assume it was the result of some error in the experiment.

Imagine a veteran tax professional, who all his life has heard and believed that the income of most Americans is taxable. When he comes across a sentence which states that a certain part of the law "*determines the sources of income for purposes of the income tax,*" but he knows that part is *not* about the income of most Americans, he most likely makes a subconscious



1 choice that he isn't even aware of. Rather than accepting all evidence in order to form a conclusion, the opposite occurs. He  
2 subconsciously believes it means something other than what it says, because believing otherwise could very well upset his  
3 world view, quite literally.

4 A simple example is a magic show. People, when sawed in half, die. Everyone in the audience at a magic show knows this.  
5 Though their eyes may tell them someone is being sawed in half, they have underlying assumptions which tell them that this  
6 evidence is unreliable. The mind seeks an alternate explanation for the evidence, since it refuses to believe the explanation  
7 which the immediate physical evidence tends to suggest. In this case, it is logical to do so.

8 However, the same phenomenon occurs whether the assumption is correct or not. If the magician actually *did* saw someone  
9 in half, the audience would assume it to be a trick. The "premises" on which the human mind functions are very difficult to  
10 change. Those who were convinced that the sun revolves around the earth, having never even considered the evidence,  
11 imprisoned, tortured, and killed people for disagreeing. If the disagreement evolved into an examination of the evidence, the  
12 truth would win. If the "tax experts" ever stop making assertions and accusations, and try to substantively respond to the  
13 evidence, the truth will win.

14 But who does know the truth about this? A conspiracy of ignorance is far easier to maintain than a conspiracy of secrecy. In  
15 other words, the fewer people know the truth about something, the more likely it is for the truth to remain hidden. If all  
16 100,000-plus IRS employees were told that all people who are not federal employees are not the proper subject of the Internal  
17 Revenue Code, there would be no chance of this remaining secret for long. If, on the other hand, the enforcers of the law are  
18 just as ignorant as everyone else, they will faithfully extort their fellow man to the best of their abilities.

19 The more I learn, the fewer people I think know the truth about the limited application of the income tax code. The average  
20 IRS employee knows little or nothing about the law. Because it is unlikely that anyone in the IRS will admit to knowing the  
21 truth, figuring out who does know the truth requires a lot of speculation. From my experiences, I doubt anyone below the  
22 level of District Director at the IRS has the slightest idea of what the truth is (at least until recently).

23 A handful of lawyers at the Department of the Treasury, as well as the actual authors of the statutes, know the truth. Beyond  
24 that, I believe very few do. Federal judges have often demonstrated ignorance about tax code, and even much, if not most, of  
25 Congress is most likely ignorant of the law. Again, the fewer people there are who know, the more secure the secret is.

26 If a lie survives long enough, it acquires "staying power." If some law passed yesterday was said to be deceptive, people  
27 wouldn't hesitate to look into it. But a claim that an 87-year-old law has been deceptive all along, resulting in trillions of  
28 dollars being unjustly taken, is likely to be unbelievable to most.

29 Suppose a mother finds \$20 in her son's room. The son, having stolen it from someone, fabricates a story about how someone  
30 gave it to him for saving a pet dog from drowning in a swimming pool. A small lie, and a relatively small theft. But then the  
31 mother (believing her son) happens to tell the story to some of her friends, and they are so impressed by the boy's bravery,  
32 that they give him another \$100. The boy, of course, still doesn't admit the truth. One of those friends happens to have a  
33 cousin who writes for a local newspaper, and he decides that it would be nice to write about something positive for a chance,  
34 and he writes a little article, praising the boy's bravery. More donations come in, and more people want to know the story.  
35 The story is a little more impressive each time the boy tells it. Then one day, a local talk show offers the boy \$2,000 for an  
36 interview. What do you expect him to do?

37 (Eventually, there is a chance that someone will want to interview the non-existent folks with the non-existent dog to get their  
38 side of it. Then the lie comes crashing down.)

39 Once upon a time, Congress committed a relatively small deception. They wrote a statute that at first glance seemed to impose  
40 a tax on the income of some U.S. citizens who lived and worked exclusively within the United States. But the tax was only  
41 for a small percentage, and very few people received enough income for it to matter. And after all, Congress wasn't to blame  
42 if the people didn't know that the law had to be read in light of the Constitutional limitations. If people failed to look up the  
43 related federal regulations, or failed to figure out the truth, Congress wasn't to blame. All Congress did was fail to publicly  
44 correct their error. Besides, why on earth would some rich, patriotic American bother to get in his horse and buggy to go  
45 rummage through law books trying to get out of this tiny little tax?

46 (When people ask me why the "rich" people, who lose millions every year to this fraud, aren't aware of this stuff and using  
47 it, I ask them when they last saw a multi-millionaire rummaging through income tax code books. The people who can afford

1 expensive "tax experts" are assuming they are getting their money's worth. I doubt they will be happy customers when they  
2 learn the truth. It may not be long before no one admits to having been a tax professional.)

3 Then a few years went by. The rates went up a bit, and the exemption amount dropped. But it still wasn't worth complaining  
4 about. Besides, if the law didn't apply to the income of all Americans, surely someone would have said so before then. So in  
5 the following years, members of Congress, who weren't aware of the original deception, eagerly raised the rates of a tax they  
6 didn't even understand, to get more revenue. The longer it lasted, the less people were able to consider that it was all a big  
7 deception. Eventually, a multi-billion-dollar industry grew out of the lie, along with an intrusive and abusive collection  
8 agency. And, for the most part, these were created and carried out by people oblivious to the truth.

9 Just like the boy who didn't save any dog, what do you expect the few in government who *do* know the truth about the  
10 "income tax" fraud to do about it now? "Oh, sorry... just kidding... it doesn't really apply to you." I don't think so.  
11 Furthermore, how do you expect the tax professionals who don't know to respond to the truth? "Ah, shucks. Well, we really  
12 blew it on that one. It seems our whole industry has been grossly incompetent for decades. Looks like most of my training  
13 and career were based on a lie. Oh well, guess I should start looking for another job." I don't think so. That's not how human  
14 nature works.

15 This fraud will end. The truth will outlive the fraud and the lies. It's only a question of time.

## 16 **1.8 Our Own Ignorance, Laziness, Arrogance, Disorganization, and Apathy: Public Enemy #1**

17 *"Bad officials are elected by good citizens who do not vote."*  
18 *[George Jean Nathan]*

19 *"Enlighten the people generally, and tyranny and oppressions of body and mind will vanish like evil spirits at the*  
20 *dawn of day."*  
21 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

22 *"The greatest enemy of the truth is very often not the lie - deliberate, contrived and dishonest - but the myth -*  
23 *persistent, persuasive and unrealistic."*  
24 *[President John F. Kennedy, at Yale University on June 11, 1962]*

25 *"Those who are too smart to engage in politics are punished by being governed by those who are dumber. "*  
26 *[Plato]*

27 So how does the government and the IRS get away with plundering our property and our earnings illegally? The Bible tells  
28 us how:

29 *"No one can enter a strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless he first binds the strong man. And then*  
30 *he will plunder his house."*  
31 *[Mark 3:27, Bible, NKJV]*

32 How does the government and the legal profession "bind us" and make us defenseless? *With our own legal ignorance* and  
33 their constant efforts to promote and encourage it!

34 *"For my people are foolish,*  
35 *They have not known Me.*  
36 *They are silly children,*  
37 *And they have no understanding,*  
38 *They are wise to do evil,*  
39 *But to do good they have no knowledge."*  
40 *[Jeremiah 4:22, Bible, NKJV]*

41 *"...it is not good for a soul to be without knowledge,"*  
42 *[Prov. 19:2, Bible, NKJV]*

43 *"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge."*  
44 *[Hosea 4:6, Bible, NKJV]*

45 *"One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."*  
46 *[Prov. 28:9, Bible, NKJV]*

1 They exploit and promote our weaknesses by deceiving us with their fraudulent IRS publications and legal treachery called  
 2 “words of art” (see section 3.9.1 for further details proving that the courts refuse to hold them accountable either for what is  
 3 in their publications or by what they say on the telephone) into thinking that we owe tax and keep us ignorant about what the  
 4 law REALLY says by refusing to ever discuss the very statutes which defines and limits their authority with us, and which  
 5 clearly shows that we aren’t liable. If we then research the statutes ourselves and confront them with the truth, they commit  
 6 tyranny in verbally and legally abusing us when they respond by telling us we are “insane”, “unreasonable”, or a crack-pot  
 7 malcontent. They do this in front of our own peers sitting on juries, who are so ignorant and naïve that they believe whatever  
 8 our dishonest government tells them. After all: a majority of your ignorant peers believed a pot smoking, draft dodging  
 9 president Bill Clinton well enough to reelect him even after all his adulterous affairs and dirty laundry was out on world TV  
 10 to watch in the biggest scandal this country has ever seen. Why wouldn’t these same dysfunctional citizens sitting on a jury  
 11 also be equally inept enough to believe a vain and junior U.S. Attorney prosecutor who is so desperate to make his Mercedes  
 12 payments that he would say or do anything to win his case and earn a name for himself? Consequently, our naïve and  
 13 simplistic desire to trust everyone and never question authority allows the government and the IRS beast to perpetuate and  
 14 spread this constructive fraud and federal slavery.

15 *“The only thing necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing or to trust bad men to do the right*  
 16 *thing.”*  
 17 *[Family Guardian Fellowship]*

18 The courts refuse to hold their own government brethren in the IRS liable for that fraud and deception so the IRS perpetuates  
 19 it with impunity and with the blessings of the Congress who oversees them. Then they rely on our own apathy and laziness  
 20 and disorganization to perpetuate that ignorance and misinformation. Most people are slaves to the government their whole  
 21 lives because of their ignorance, apathy, and laziness. Let’s face it: It’s VERY HARD WORK to always be questioning  
 22 authority and challenging jurisdiction, but this is what it takes to remain free, friends! As confirmation of this fact, the bible  
 23 passage below makes it very clear that the reward for laziness is slavery:

24 *“The hand of the diligent will rule, but the lazy man will be put to **forced labor** [slavery!].”*  
 25 *[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

26 The purpose of this book is therefore to eliminate what we call “slavery to ignorance” and to dispel the deception and  
 27 propaganda our government feeds us, so that we may exercise a mature love toward our fellow man:

28 *“...we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the*  
 29 *trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, but speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all*  
 30 *things into Him who is the head—Christ.”*  
 31 *[Eph. 4:14, Bible, NKJV]*

32 Make no mistake about it: ignorance is a sin that can hurt us more than any other sin. Here is what the bible says about how  
 33 damning ignorance and apathy can be, from Proverbs 1:20-33:

34 *“Wisdom calls aloud outside; she raises her voice in the open squares, she cries out in the chief concourses, at*  
 35 *the openings of the gates in the city she speaks her words; **how long, you simple ones, will you love simplicity?***  
 36 ***For scorners delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge.** Turn at my rebuke; surely I will pour out my*  
 37 *spirit on you; I will make my words known to you. **Because I have called and you refused, I have stretched out***  
 38 ***my hand and no one regarded, because you disdain my counsel, and would have none of my rebuke, I also***  
 39 ***will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your terror comes. When your terror comes like a storm, and***  
 40 ***your destruction comes like a whirlwind, when distress and anguish come upon you. Then they will call on***  
 41 ***me, but I will not answer; they will seek me diligently, but they will not find me. Because they hated knowledge,***  
 42 ***and did not choose the fear of the Lord.** They have none of my counsel and despised my every rebuke. Therefore*  
 43 *they shall eat the fruit of their own way, and be filled to the full with their own fancies. **For the turning away of***  
 44 ***the simple will slay [and enslave] them. And the complacency of fools will destroy them; but whoever listens***  
 45 ***to me [and studies My Law, the Bible] will dwell safely, and will be secure, without fear of evil.”***  
 46 *[Prov. 1:20-33, Bible]*

47 Here is the way one famous Constitutional Law attorney describes how we have become our own worst enemies by maligning  
 48 God and trusting in our own vanity and strength instead of the Lord:

49 *“Americans have the government officials they deserve. Our society openly castigates the Almighty, thus making*  
 50 *tolerable judicial pronouncements like that of today [6/25/2002] which banished God from our national pledge.*  
 51 *The darkness of night follows the light of day, and similarly when any nation shakes its angry fist at the maker of*  
 52 *the universe, it can expect the withdrawal of divine protection. Conditions are now riper for a strike by our*  
 53 *national tormenters.”*

1 *Those who disdain our sacred pledge are no better than our enemies.”*  
 2 *[Attorney Larry Becraft]*

3 The evil government beast is simply acting as God’s avenger against sinful people who won’t be obedient to what His Law  
 4 and His Word say they should do. Plain and simple. We reap what we sow: We are selfish, covetous, dishonest, and lazy  
 5 so we get a selfish, covetous, dishonest, and lazy government that plunders and enslaves us. That’s the golden rule in  
 6 operation and why should we expect any different? It’s Divine Justice meted out by a Sovereign and Omnipotent God. In  
 7 the scientific field, this same Golden Rule was described by Sir Isaac Newton, the inventor of calculus, as part of *Newton’s*  
 8 *Laws* as follows:

9 *“For every action, there is an equal and opposite reaction.”*  
 10 *[Newton’s Laws]*

11 Even the Supreme Court agrees that the government we have can be no better than we ourselves are:

12 ***“All systems of government suppose they are to be administered by men of common sense and common honesty.***  
 13 ***In our country, as all ultimately depends on the voice of the people, they have it in their power, and it is to be***  
 14 ***presumed they generally will choose men of this description: but if they will not, the case, to be sure, is without***  
 15 ***remedy. If they choose fools, they will have foolish laws. If they choose knaves, they will have knavish ones.***  
 16 ***But this can never be the case until they are generally fools or knaves themselves, which, thank God, is not likely***  
 17 ***ever to become the character of the American people.”** [Justice Iredell] (Fries’s Case (CC) F Cas No 5126,  
 18 *supra.*)  
 19 *[Ludecke v. Watkins, 335 U.S. 160, 92 L.Ed. 1881, 1890, 68 S.Ct. 1429 (1948)]**

20 We are a government *“Of the people, for the people, and by the people”* as Abraham Lincoln said in his Gettysburg Address.  
 21 When we, as our own “rulers”, choose “fools” for our public servants as the Supreme Court says above, the Bible tells us the  
 22 result:

23 *“A ruler who lacks understanding is a great oppressor”*  
 24 *[Prov. 28:16, Bible, NKJV]*

25 And this is *exactly* what we have now folks. Here’s an example of that very metaphor from the Bible which explains it all:

26 ***“The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness’ sake; He will exalt the law and make it honorable. But this is***  
 27 ***a people robbed and plundered!** [by the IRS] **All of them are snared in [legal] holes [by the sophistry of greedy***  
 28 ***IRS and DOJ lawyers], and they are hidden in prison houses; they are for prey, and no one delivers; for***  
 29 ***plunder, and no one says, “Restore!”***

30 ***Who among you will give ear to this? Who will listen and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for***  
 31 ***plunder, and Israel to the robbers? [IRS] Was it not the Lord, He against whom we have sinned? For they***  
 32 ***would not walk in His ways, nor were they obedient to His law, therefore He has poured on him the fury of His***  
 33 ***anger and the strength of battle; it has set him on fire all around, yet he did not know; and it burned him, yet he***  
 34 ***did not take it to heart.”***  
 35 *[Isaiah 42:21-25, Bible, NKJV]*

36 How does the Lord “exalt the law” [His law]? By allowing Satan to plunder and harm those who don’t follow it! This very  
 37 analogy explains why we have become a country besieged by terrorism and fear:

38 ***“For you have trusted in your wickedness; you [the IRS and our wicked public servants] have said, ‘No one***  
 39 ***sees me’; your wisdom and your knowledge have warped you; and you have said in your heart, “I am and there***  
 40 ***is no one else besides me.’ Therefore evil shall come upon you; you shall not know from where it arises** [Iraq?  
 41 ***Afghanistan? Who knows?]. And trouble shall come upon you; you shall not be able to put it off [war on terrorism***  
 42 ***will have no end]. And desolation shall come upon you suddenly [9-11-2001 in New York City], which you shall***  
 43 ***not know. Stand now with your enchantments [New Age philosophy, “people friendly” churches that don’t preach***  
 44 ***doctrine and God’s word and have become vanity] and the multitude of your sorceries [drugs], in which you have***  
 45 ***labored from your youth—perhaps you will be able to profit, perhaps you will prevail. You are wearied in the***  
 46 ***multitude of your counsels [greedy lawyers and corrupt politicians and judges who we have too many of in this***  
 47 ***country]; Let now the astrologers, the stargazers [horoscopes, weathermen], and the monthly prognosticators***  
 48 ***[stock market analysts] stand up and save you from these things that shall come upon you. Behold, they shall be***  
 49 ***as stubble, they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame;** it shall not be a coal to be warmed by,  
 50 ***nor a fire to sit before! Thus shall they be to you with whom you have labored, your merchants from your youth;***  
 51 ***they shall wander each one to his quarter. No one shall save you.”***  
 52 *[Isaiah 47:10-11, Bible, NKJV]***

1 Extremely prophetic words indeed, friends! Because of how damning ignorance and the wrath of God that results from it can  
2 be, the Bible therefore lauds the opposite of ignorance, which is “wisdom”. Here are a few scriptures on the subject of  
3 wisdom:

4 *“He who gets wisdom loves his own soul; he who keeps understanding will find good.”*  
5 *[Prov. 19:8, Bible, NKJV]*

6 *“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding.”*  
7 *[Prov. 4:7]*

8 *[INTERPRETATION: Get wise and get educated! Try to answer the question “why” whenever anyone from the*  
9 *government insists that you must do something. Question their authority constantly.]*

10 *“The mouth of the righteous speaks wisdom, and his tongue talks of justice. The law of his God is in his heart;*  
11 *none of his steps shall slide. The wicked watches the righteous, and seeks to slay him. The Lord will not leave*  
12 *him in his hand, nor condemn him when he is judged. Wait on the Lord, and keep His way, and He shall exalt*  
13 *you to inherit the land; when the wicked are cut off, you shall see it.”*  
14 *[Prov. 37:30-34]*

15 *“Honesty is the first chapter in the book of wisdom.”*  
16 *[Thomas Jefferson to Nathaniel Macon, 1819. ME 15:180 ]*

17 *“Wisdom is better than strength. Nevertheless the poor man’s wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard.*  
18 *Words of the wise, spoken quietly [in this book, for instance], should be heard rather than the shout of a ruler of*  
19 *fools [the federal courts and congress?]. Wisdom is better than weapons of war; but one sinner [the IRS] destroys*  
20 *much good.”*  
21 *[Eccl. 9:16-18, Bible, NKJV]*

22 How do we obtain wisdom? Here is how:

23 *“If any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally and without reproach, and it will be*  
24 *given to him. But let him ask in faith, with no doubting, for he who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven and*  
25 *tossed by the wind. For let not that man suppose that he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-*  
26 *minded man, unstable in all his ways.”*  
27 *[James 1:5-7]*  
28 *[INTERPRETATION: Faith in God and the humility to ask God for help is the key to obtaining wisdom.]*

29 *“10 The fear [respect] of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do his*  
30 *commandments: His praise endureth forever.”*  
31 *[Psalm 111:10]*

32 *“My son, if you receive my words, and treasure my commands within you, so that you incline your ear to wisdom,*  
33 *and apply your heart to understanding; yes, if you cry out for discernment, understanding, if you seek her as*  
34 *silver, and search for her as for hidden treasures; then you will understand the fear of the Lord, and find the*  
35 *knowledge of God. For the Lord gives wisdom; from His mouth come knowledge and understanding; He stores*  
36 *up sound wisdom for the upright; he is a shield to those who walk uprightly; he guards the paths of justice,*  
37 *and preserves the way of His saints. Then you will understand righteousness and justice, equity and every good*  
38 *path.”*  
39 *[Prov. 2:1-9]*

40 *[INTERPRETATION: You can't be free and deserve your liberty without treasuring and seeking wisdom and*  
41 *knowledge and understanding, which start with a reverence/fear and respect for God almighty!! Faith in God is*  
42 *the foundation of all good and lasting things in life.]*

43 Once we have wisdom, whose chief source comes only from God, how do we increase that wisdom and protect ourselves  
44 from harm and abuse? The Bible again tells us how:

45 *“Wise people store up knowledge, but the mouth of the foolish is near destruction.”*  
46 *[Prov. 10:14, Bible]*

47 This book is my attempt to fulfill the very calling described above, and I hope it represents the greatest accumulation of  
48 organized facts and *knowledge* available about the subject of income taxes and the government fraud, extortion, and  
49 racketeering that perpetuates them.

50 The key to regaining our sovereignty, folks, is education and virtue. We also need to study and understand the principles of  
51 Christian liberty both from the Bible and as we describe them in this book, because God says we will be *greatly blessed* for  
52 doing so:

1                   *“But **he who looks into the perfect law of liberty** [God’s law] and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer*  
 2                   *but a doer of the work, this one **will be blessed in what he does.**”*  
 3                   *[James 1:25, Bible, NKJV]*

4           The main purpose of parenting and education, for instance, is to eliminate ignorance and foolishness from our children and  
 5           teach them wisdom. Based on the pernicious evils we continue to allow our own public servants to foist upon us through the  
 6           fraud and deceit of the IRS, and in our name no less (they are our “government servants” and “agents”, you know!), it’s clear  
 7           that our culture is on the decline because we aren’t investing enough time in our children to make them wise. Instead, we  
 8           abdicate our parenting responsibilities by putting them into the custody of the liberal media propaganda machine on television  
 9           and government-sanctioned monopoly called “public education”. Do you think the socialist government wolves who run our  
 10          public schools are going to teach your children “sheep” that they are the sovereigns in charge of the government? Here are  
 11          a few additional secular quotes about such wisdom and knowledge:

12                   *“A general Dissolution of Principles and Manners will more surely overthrow the Liberties of America than the*  
 13                   *whole Force of the Common Enemy. While the People are virtuous they cannot be subdued; but when they lose*  
 14                   *their virtue they will be ready to surrender their Liberties to the first external or internal invader. ... **If Virtue***  
 15                   ***and Knowledge are diffused among the People, they will never be enslaved. This will be their great Security.**”*  
 16                   3  
 17                   *[Samuel Adams]*

18                   *“The important thing is not to stop questioning.”*  
 19                   *[Albert Einstein]*

20                   *“Only the educated are free.”*  
 21                   *[Epicetus]*

22                   *“What luck for the rulers that men do not think.”*  
 23                   *[Adolf Hitler]*

24                   *“Where all men think alike, no one thinks very much.”*  
 25                   *[Walter Lippmann]*

26           In the Parable of the Wheat and Tares found in Matt 13:24-43, the Bible confirms that we are stewards over what God has  
 27           given us and that we should not neglect our stewardship. Part of this stewardship involves good parenting and being vigilant  
 28           and highly involved with governing ourselves so that evil does not infest our government and destroy our country. Here is  
 29           how Jesus tells the story. You will note that the event that allowed evil to happen was the farmer went to sleep and didn’t  
 30           pay attention to his field:

31                   *The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; **but while men slept, his enemy [IRS/corrupt***  
 32                   ***government] came and sowed tares [weeds] among the wheat and went his way.** But when the grain had sprouted*  
 33                   *and produced a crop, then the tares also appeared. So the servants of the owner came and said to him, “Sir, did*  
 34                   *you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have tares?” He said to them, “An enemy has done this.”*  
 35                   *The servants said to him, “Do you want us then to go and gather them up?” But he said, “No, lest while you*  
 36                   *gather up the tares you also uproot the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest, and at the time*  
 37                   *of harvest I will say to the reapers, ‘First gather together the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them, but*  
 38                   *gather the wheat into my barn.’”*  
 39                   *[Matt 13:24-30]*

40                   ...

41                   *Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house. And his disciples came to Him, saying, “Explain to*  
 42                   *us the parable of the tares of the field.”*

43                   *He answered and said to them: “He who sows the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world, the good*  
 44                   *seeds are the sons of the kingdom, but the tares are the sons of the wicked one. The enemy who sowed them is*  
 45                   *the devil, the harvest is the end of the age, and the reapers are the angels. Therefore, as the tares [the evil and*

<sup>3</sup> **Adams, Samuel.** February 12, 1779, in a letter to James Warren. Harry Alonzo Cushing, editor, *The Writings of Samuel Adams* (New York: G.P. Putnam’s Sons, 1905), Vol. IV, p. 124. Rosalie J. Slater, *Teaching and Learning America’s Christian Heritage* (San Francisco: Foundation for American Christian Education, American Revolution Bicentennial edition, 1975), p. 251. Verna M. Hall, 2 (San Francisco: Foundation for American Christian Education, 1976), p. 4. Stephen K. McDowell and Mark A. Beliles, *America’s Providential History* (Charlottesville, VA: Providence Press, 1988), pp. 148, 179. Peter Marshall and David Manuel, *The Glory of America* (Bloomington, MN: Garborg’s Heart’N Home, Inc., 1991), 9.27. Stephen McDowell and Mark Beliles, “The Providential Perspective” (Charlottesville, VA: The Providence Foundation, P.O. Box 6759, Charlottesville, Va. 22906, January 1994), Vol. 9, No. 1, p. 4.

ignorant tyrants and liars in the government and the IRS] are gathered and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of this age. The Son of Man will send out His angels, and they will gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who practice lawlessness[the IRS and the government], and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears let him hear!"  
[Matt 13:36-43, Bible, NKJV]

The parable has the man sowing the field (the world) as Jesus Christ, but it could just as easily be us during our brief stewardship here on earth. This parable is a warning for us to not let evil go unnoticed or unpunished or unprevented or unrebuked, because we make more room for Satan in our lives and eventually will be held accountable to God himself both for our sins of commission, but more importantly, for sins of omission, which are the things we didn't do that we should have done.

"The violence of the wicked will destroy them because they refuse to do justice."  
[Prov. 21:7, Bible, NKJV]

What might those things be that we didn't do? How about voting and serving on jury duty consistently and responsibly? How about watching our politicians and whipping them into line on a regular basis? How about challenging the IRS instead of bending over and letting them screw us unlawfully on a regular basis? How about litigating pro per to defend our liberties so that greedy lawyers and politicians don't make financial slaves of us all with their tax statutes? Are we effectively asleep at the polls and in our other civic duties because we are too distracted to be responsible and vigilant citizens, while our politicians and IRS destroy our rights one by one? These are the things that good stewardship is all about. The Lord certainly has a much higher calling for us all than living our lives half-asleep in a hedonistic stupor. He wants us to be vigilant stewards:

"Therefore let us not sleep, as others do, but let us watch and be sober. For those who sleep, sleep at night, and those who get drunk are drunk at night. But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation."  
[1 Thess. 5:6-8, Bible, NKJV]

Red Beckman, author of **Walls In Our Minds**, writes:

"Americans are sitting in a jail cell with the door not only unlocked but wide open; but stay locked mentally in their cell from fear."

Fear is simply the result of ignorance which comes from the Latin "ignoro", meaning "to not know." Ignorance is possibly the biggest problem we have in America today. This ignorance makes us prime targets for unscrupulous and illegal tactics by IRS and government operatives. Fortunately, it's not terminal and many have gone into rapid remission with the application of sufficient knowledge and the discipline and organization to systematically acquire that knowledge. It's amazing how fear fades away in the face of truth and knowledge. However, we can't know the truth and eliminate the fear without knowledge and wisdom and we can't gain knowledge and wisdom if we are too lazy, disorganized, apathetic, or undisciplined to do the homework and the hard work necessary to get educated and become wise and to build a defense against the government plunder of our property and our Constitutional rights. After all, "The price of freedom is eternal vigilance!", as they say. The bible confirms this:

"Let all things be done decently and in order."  
[1 Cor. 14:40 ]  
[INTERPRETATION: Don't be disorganized or immoral!!]

"Go to the ant, you sluggard! Consider her ways and be wise, which, having no captain, overseer or ruler, provides her supplies in the summer, and gathers her food in the harvest, how long will you slumber, O sluggard? When will you rise from your sleep? A little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep--SO shall your poverty come on you like a prowler, and your need like an armed man."

[Prov. 6:6-11, Bible, NKJV]  
[INTERPRETATION: Laziness allows us to be robbed of our heritage and our birthright, our dignity and our sovereignty, because we are victimized by it and will end up surrendering our rights to the government out of desperation in order to get the sustenance that we were otherwise unwilling to earn. This makes the government into a Robinhood, which using the tools of democracy, turns a sword against its own citizens to rob from the rich to give to the poor. This leads to the downfall of democracy eventually because the government becomes an agent of plunder.]

1 Many vigilant and hard-working Americans have come to the realization that the fear they've been experiencing toward the  
 2 Internal Revenue Service (IRS) might just prove to have been F.E.A.R.--False Evidence Appearing Real. These disciplined,  
 3 thoughtful, and patriotic Americans have taken the time and effort to supplement their poor public (government) education  
 4 to study the tax code and regulations and have become aware that they have never been made the subject of the income tax  
 5 or been made liable for the payment of it. They have taken the time to realize that the IRS publications and Internal Revenue  
 6 Manual (I.R.M.) are a farce, cannot be used in court or given the authority of law (see section 3.16), and do not accurately or  
 7 untruthfully portray the tax code as they are written and described in chapter 3 of this document. *This myth and Great*  
 8 *Deception is perpetuated mainly by the terms and definitions that are used in the I.R.S. publications which aren't adequately*  
 9 *defined anywhere but in the U.S. Code (see section 3.9.1 et seq), which the IRS and the government are hoping the average*  
 10 *person is too lazy and apathetic to read.* And even if they read it, they often refuse to organize what they have learned into  
 11 a cohesive work such as this one that exposes the Great Deception clearly and in its entirety. Citizens don't want to read the  
 12 tax code because these laws have been deliberately obscured and obfuscated and complicated so much over the years by  
 13 crafty lawyers to conceal the truth, that they believe they are incapable of figuring it out without a formal legal education.  
 14 Furthermore, since most people HATE lawyers, then they have even less reason to learn about law! Add to this dismal  
 15 situation the censorship of the churches by the IRS with the threat of pulling their tax exemption if they get politically involved  
 16 or endorse legislation to clean things up, and you have a recipe for apathy (see section 6.6.4 entitled "Church Censorship,  
 17 Manipulation, and Castration by the IRS" for further details). It's no wonder why more people don't vote!

18 Patriotic and informed citizens have learned that Congress never intended for income taxes to be imposed on Americans  
 19 working within the now 50 Union states. Exhibit "A" on this issue is the definition of "individual", which is what we claim  
 20 we are when we file a 1040 form. The top of this form says "U.S. Individual income tax return". But guess what, we are  
 21 lying when we claim to be an "individual" unless we are an "alien" because of the definition of the word "individual" found  
 22 in [26 C.F.R. §1.1441](#). You will learn later in section 3.9.1.10 that "individual" is defined nowhere but in [26 C.F.R. §1.1441-](#)  
 23 [1\(c\)\(3\)](#) to mean "alien" and that the government was so concerned about you finding out this definition that they didn't put  
 24 it anywhere in the Internal Revenue Code and instead chose to bury in deep in the regulations in a section where you weren't  
 25 likely to look.

26 **26 C.F.R. §1.1441(c)(3)(i) Alien: *The term alien individual means an individual who is not a citizen or a***  
 27 ***national of the United States. See Sec. 1.1-1(c).***

28 Loyal and patriotic Americans who have invested the time to learn the truth know that, just as the buying of a bottle of liquor  
 29 for an alcoholic enables his disease and prevents his recovery, the income tax enables our "spendaholic" federal government,  
 30 while financing its merger into an emerging "New World Order." These loyal Americans have also learned that we should  
 31 not depend on the government to defend or secure our rights or provide for our prosperity but rather on liberty, the rule of  
 32 law, and our own resourcefulness and vigilance to protect that liberty from tyranny, because:

33 *"Neither the wisest Constitution or the wisest laws will secure liberty and happiness of a people whose manners*  
 34 *are universally corrupt. He therefore is the truest friend of the liberty of his country who tries most to promote*  
 35 *its virtues."*  
 36 *[Samuel Adams]*

37 *"The sentiments of men are known not only by what they receive, but what they reject also."*  
 38 *[Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:28 ]*

39 *"Everyone is bound to bear witness, where wrong has been done."*  
 40 *[Thomas Jefferson: Virginia Board of Visitors Minutes, 1824. ME 19:449 [Are you calling your government on*  
 41 *the carpet by bearing witness of the wrong the IRS is doing to so many Americans?]]*

42 *"The true danger is when liberty is nibbled away, for expedients, and by parts ... the only thing necessary for evil*  
 43 *to triumph is for good men to do nothing."*  
 44 *[Edmund Burke]*

45 *"Government big enough to supply everything you need is big enough to take everything you have. The course*  
 46 *of history shows that as a government grows, liberty decreases."*  
 47 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

48 *"They that can give up essential liberty to obtain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety."*  
 49 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

50 *"The independence and the liberty you possess are the work of ... joint efforts, of common dangers, suffering, and*  
 51 *successes."*



1 [George Washington  
2 Interpretation: work together to secure your liberties against tyranny of the government! Join a militia and a  
3 tax honesty organization!]

4 Finally, we'd like to emphasize that we want to **discourage** your participation as a freedom advocate **unless** you are  
5 willing, motivated, organized, and disciplined enough (called caution and discretion) to ensure that everything you say and  
6 do as part of the movement is completely consistent with the truth and the law, because this is the only way to build the  
7 credibility and the momentum of the movement and achieve its goals in our lifetime. Much damage has been done by well-  
8 intentioned but ignorant and or lazy Americans who either don't do their homework, misquote the law, or misapply or  
9 misinterpret it when they communicate their understanding to others. **The government and the IRS love seeing this**  
10 **happen, because it undermines and destroys the freedom movement and allows the slavery based on**  
11 **government fraud called the income tax to continue. Every time a freedom advocate misquotes or**  
12 **misinterprets the law, they undermine the credibility of EVERYONE in the movement, because they**  
13 **provide yet another reason for less informed citizens to view us as a bunch of ignorant, misinformed**  
14 **crackpot "malcontents", which is where the IRS likes to keep us.** That is the reason why the IRS will refuse  
15 to discuss the law with everyone who calls them...because it perpetuates the myths, the fears, and the mistrust caused by  
16 ignorance of the law and the truth. The best way to discredit a detractor is to ignore him and keep him ignorant of the truth.  
17 Any good (and unethical) lawyer knows that the minute you start paying attention to the statements of opponents is the minute  
18 you have to begin to recognize and respond to the validity and the truth of their arguments. This obligates you to educate  
19 them on the error of their observations in order to arrive at the truth, but that process of education is what empowers them  
20 and gives them more credibility, which makes them even MORE dangerous, so why sharpen the sword of your enemy for  
21 free? By the IRS listening to or responding to their detractors, they are in effect granting them "jurisdiction" over the issues,  
22 which is not something that they want informed citizens to have. Knowledge is power and ignoring someone deprives them  
23 of learning and knowledge and keeps them powerless. Remember that whenever you interact with the IRS in the future!

## 24 1.9 Political "Tax Prisoners"

25 *A little boy goes to his dad and asks, "What is politics?"*

26 *Dad says, "Well son, let me try to explain it this way: I'm the breadwinner of the family, so let's call me Business.*  
27 *Your Mom, she's the administrator of the money, so we'll call her the Government. We're here to take care of your*  
28 *needs, so we'll call you the people. The nanny, we'll consider her the Working Class. And your baby brother, we'll*  
29 *call him the Future. Now, think about that and see if that makes sense,"*

30 *So the little boy goes off to bed thinking about what dad had said. Later that night, he hears his baby brother*  
31 *crying, so he gets up to check on him. He finds that the baby has severely soiled his diaper.*

32 *So the little boy goes to his parents' room and finds his mother sound asleep. Not wanting to wake her, he goes*  
33 *to the nanny's room. Finding the door locked, he peeks in the keyhole and sees his father in bed with the nanny.*  
34 *He gives up and goes back to bed.*

35 *The next morning, the little boy says to his father, "Dad, I think I understand the concept of politics now."*

36 *The father says, "Good son, tell me in your own words what you think politics is all about."*

37 *The little boy replies, "Well, while Business is screwing the Working Class, the Government is sound asleep, the*  
38 *People are being ignored and the Future is in deep shit."*

39 Many people have been deceived into thinking that America is a free country and that federal judges are trusted and ethical  
40 men. They think that communist and socialist countries are the only ones that have "political prisoners." They believe this  
41 because they have been spoon fed lies by the liberal media for their whole lives and never bothered to check the facts for  
42 themselves and naively believed what they heard. What they fail to realize, is that the fraud of income taxes and the slavery  
43 they produce are the main cause for many political imprisonments in the U.S. against those who protest their injustice. Those  
44 who expose the Great Deception about income taxes and want to have their constitutional rights protected and respected can  
45 and often are audited and harassed by the IRS and prosecuted and imprisoned for their "political" activity. Case in point is  
46 Dr. Phil Roberts. Below is a brief summary of his fascinating story as told directly by him and which is posted on our website  
47 (at <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/CaseStudies/PhilRoberts/PhilRoberts.htm>):

1 Dr. Phil Roberts filed suit against the government in 1999 after being investigated for 4 years by a local IRS  
 2 agent. His suit included making this person leave him, his reputation and business alone. He also wanted the  
 3 court to answer the question: "Can I be forced to sign a statement or declaration under the penalty of perjury?"  
 4 He currently has a civil case on appeal at the 8th Circuit in St. Louis over the constitutional issue of forcing him  
 5 to sign a 1040 form or any other form under the penalty of perjury. This case is fully briefed and has been for 1  
 6 year at the appellant court without a ruling. Actually, it will be 1 year as of January 2001.

7 Just so happens approximately 1 month after his case was appealed to the 8th Circuit is when he received a letter  
 8 from the local Asst. Prosecuting Attorney requesting that he come in and "negotiate a plea or I will indict you!"  
 9 He believes this "plea" had something to do with him dropping his case at the 8th Circuit. However, Dr. Roberts  
 10 was not interested in a plea but he is very interested in having and standing up for his constitutional rights. He  
 11 did not appear before the prosecutor nor before the grand jury. (He was not invited to go before the grand jury).

12 He received the indictment and was ordered to appear for an arraignment hearing. He was charged with violating  
 13 26 U.S.C. 7203 which is a punishment statute. (Feel free to look it up in the law books or go to any website that  
 14 posts IRS Code.) At the arraignment, they tried to force him to sign another form under the penalty listing all of  
 15 his assets and had he made 1 mistake they could have and would have charged him with a felony and  
 16 imprisonment up to 5 years. He refused to sign this form stating they could not force him to be a witness against  
 17 himself because the constitution clearly protects him from this. The judge ordered him into custody of the U.S.  
 18 Marshall, without bond. He, then, was shackled at the ankles, waist and wrist and escorted to jail. The U.S.  
 19 Marshall said "I'm taking you out like I took out John Gotti and Noriega." Dr. Roberts said the main difference  
 20 is "your taking me away for a misdemeanor."

21 This all transpired on a Thursday and the judge conveniently left town on Friday. However, a habeas corpus was  
 22 filed at the home of a local Magistrate which just so happened to be a patient of Dr. Roberts (former patient at  
 23 the time since she had been notified by the IRS of the investigation). She "acted" like she was upset that her  
 24 chiropractor was in jail but had to wait until the "judge" returned before proceeding. On Monday, Judge Robert  
 25 Dawson was informed of this matter and by habeas rules he had to set a hearing and state 1) why he had  
 26 incarcerated Dr. Roberts or 2) let him out because he had no authority to hold him. The hearing was set for  
 27 Wednesday AM and instead of having a hearing and having to write an order saying he was wrong, Judge Dawson  
 28 faxed the orders to release Dr. Roberts on bond. He was free by 2 pm.

29 Dr. Roberts case was put on the "fast track" in the court system and went to trial in June. He was unable to put  
 30 witnesses on the stand, unable to present evidence of his good faith in communicating with the IRS over this issue  
 31 and was basically railroaded to prison after a 3 1/2 day trial. I am forwarding all transcripts that I have and you  
 32 will find that they make for interesting reading. His attorney repeatedly asked in the arraignment "what is the  
 33 law that Dr. Roberts supposedly violated?" The only response is "we will answer that at a later date" or "sit down  
 34 and shut up." Well, that later date never came. At trial, the government never once spoke of any law and only  
 35 tainted the jury with how much money he made, where he lived, what he drove and what else he had purchased.

36 Throughout the trial the judge would tell his attorney "you can take that up on your appeal." (Is this not directing  
 37 the jury to a guilty verdict?) He would also say such things as: "if there's an objection from the prosecution, I  
 38 will sustain it, Mr. Stillely move on to something else." (The judge was practicing law from the bench when he was  
 39 objecting for the prosecution.)

40 Dr. Phil Roberts is currently in Texarkana, TX after being sentenced to 9 months for Count 1 Willful Failure to  
 41 File and 7 months for Count 2 Willful Failure to File. He has appealed the jury verdict based on many biased  
 42 issues throughout the case as you will see when you read the transcript. His appeal was filed in a timely manner  
 43 and according to 8th Circuit rules the gov't had 10 days to respond to his appeal. Well, 6 (six) Federal Gov't  
 44 Attorney's filed their response 13 days late. If Dr. Roberts' attorney's had filed his appeal late he would have been  
 45 denied the right to an appeal, we shall see how this plays out. YOU NOW KNOW THIS IS A BIG ISSUE IF THEY  
 46 HAVE 6 GOV'T ATTORNEY'S RESPONDING TO THIS APPEAL FOR A MISDEMEANOR!!!!!!!!!!

47 I am forwarding the appeal, the gov't response and Dr. Robert's response to the gov't. Please note in the gov't  
 48 response the following:

49 PAGE 10: Line 6: "Allowing Fifth Amendment claims like defendant's would seriously undermine the operation  
 50 of the self-assessment system of income taxation."

51 PAGE 11: Line 14: "Taxpayers could immunize themselves from their reporting obligations through the simple  
 52 expedient of committing a failure to file misdemeanor. The tax system could not survive widespread use of such  
 53 a scheme."

54 PAGE 11: Line 19: "Finally, defendant's assertion that his filing returns could have subjected him to a risk of  
 55 prosecution if the returns were legally or factually incorrect is unavailing. A taxpayer's fear of prosecution must  
 56 arise from the return's disclosing criminal activities rather than the possibility of making a mistake."

1 Does anyone fear filing a tax return because they may be disclosing criminal activities? No, we fear that the tax  
2 form is wrong in some way and "they will come after us!"

3 Also, his total sentence, probation etc. is approximately 3 1/2 years. The maximum under sentencing guidelines  
4 is 1 year. But they really stretched it to put Dr. Roberts behind bars and keep him under their thumb for a long  
5 time. After all, he is a big threat to society for expecting his privacy and his 5th Amendment rights to be respected!

6 Dr. Roberts has never been assessed. At sentencing the IRS agent testified that he was not an expert in assessment,  
7 was not qualified to do an assessment and had very little knowledge of the code but he did an assessment anyway  
8 and came up with a \$\$\$\$ figure in order to get his sentencing points raised so that he would have to do prison  
9 time.

10 Dr. Roberts' appeal was fully briefed by both sides last Tuesday and according to the clerk will go to the panel  
11 of judges. This is also what they said approximately 1 year ago about his civil case. So currently, he has a civil  
12 and criminal case on appeal at the 8th Circuit Court in St. Louis.

13 You can also look at additional information at [www.springer2000.org](http://www.springer2000.org) concerning his case

14 Any correspondence or questions you might have you can direct to me at [opusone@ipa.net](mailto:opusone@ipa.net) or feel free to write:

15 Phil Roberts #05997-010-W1  
16 Federal Prison Camp  
17 Po Box 9300  
18 Texarkana, TX 75505

19 He reported sometimes feels he is the only one in this fight since no one or no group has really taken his cause  
20 on. Mainly because the story has not been out there. But he is ready to get the story out and tell his side. Anyone  
21 interested in writing him a letter of encouragement or "that a boy" feel free to do so I know he would love to hear  
22 of others in the fight!

23 Feel free to email this information to anyone who is interested. If the gov't can do it to a well-known, respected,  
24 upstanding citizen without blinking an eye or an uprising from the people we should all be worried that we are  
25 next!!!!

26 Thanks,

27 Brenda Gray  
28 [opusone@ipa.net](mailto:opusone@ipa.net)

29 Can you see by reading this real-life serious anecdote that there is a war going on, and that it is a treasonous war of deceit  
30 and intimidation waged by the government against its own citizens and in direct violation of the U.S. Constitution? In effect,  
31 the government either through extortion or exploiting us with our own ignorance is compelling us into either being financial  
32 slaves of the IRS or "political tax prisoners"? Why shouldn't the illegal and unconstitutional harassment of the IRS against  
33 us be called "stalking" and why isn't it prosecuted by the Department of Justice or the Attorney general as a violation of the  
34 antiterrorism bill known as the "USA Patriot Act"? Why doesn't the federal government convict itself of extortion and  
35 terrorism and the IRS of money laundering (see section 5.8 of the Tax Fraud Prevention Manual, Form #06.008 for the basis  
36 of claims against the government) and RICO charges? We would argue it is because the money the feds extort from us keeps  
37 especially the judges looking the other way! We would argue that there is a "judicial conspiracy" of massive proportions  
38 to protect the income tax. We devote a large portion of the book in section 6.6 to documenting this conspiracy. An example  
39 of this conspiracy in action is what happened to Dr. Phil Roberts as described above. An old Chinese proverb bears this  
40 out:

41 "The mouth which eats does not talk."  
42 [Chinese Proverb]

43 Judges don't talk or tell the truth because they are in effect "bribed" by our tax dollars not to declare the illegal activities of  
44 the Internal Revenue Service in misenforcing our tax code unconstitutional and criminal. They are part of a massive extortion  
45 ring (RICO, or Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization) and a judicial conspiracy to protect the income tax that is so large  
46 that it boggles the mind to even conceive. It is one of the greatest frauds in the history of the world. That is the only  
47 conclusion you can reach after you examine what the law itself says about your lack of tax liability as extensively revealed  
48 in this document. As you will find out from reading chapter 6, this fraud and extortion involves all branches of the U.S.  
49 Government: 1. The President; 2. Treasury/IRS; 3. Department of Justice; 4. Department of State; 5. Congress; 6. The

1 Federal Judiciary. All of these branches and parts of the government have a conflict of interest in upholding and expanding  
2 the illegal administration of our income tax code because they are all "tax consumers" who want to pick your pocket.

3 All you have to do is consider how many people are afraid of the IRS to realize that we do indeed live in a police state. How  
4 is the fear of the IRS any different than the fear of the KGB? How is it that such a basic right as privacy, guaranteed by the  
5 4th Amendment to the Constitution, is something that the IRS routinely fines people \$500 for wanting to have respected  
6 (whenever you won't sign your income tax return, they fine you \$500 under the Jurat Amendment). How is it that the exercise  
7 of a right as basic as privacy can be in effect taxed and penalized by the IRS, which amounts to being compelled to *not*  
8 exercise one's rights? Why call it a right at all if it can be taxed, penalized, or discouraged by the government in any way?  
9 How is it that this same desire for privacy guaranteed by the 4th Amendment can lead to criminal prosecution by the IRS and  
10 imprisonment for "Willful Failure to File" under 26 U.S.C. §7203 if you don't sign your return? **When are we going to wake**  
11 **up and fix this as a collective before it is too late?** Some people, including Paul Mitchell of the Supreme Law Firm (see  
12 <http://www.supremelaw.org/>) have made it their life's passion to educate and free these political "tax" prisoners and fight  
13 government tyranny. Why can't we be just as vigilant?

14 Now a rhetorical question. One of our readers asked the following question, which we think is very enlightening and thought  
15 provoking:

16 *"The courts say that the question as to the vote of the 16th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution is a political*  
17 *question to be handled by Congress (See U.S. v. Stahl, 792 F.2d. 1438 (1986)), and the Congress says that it is a*  
18 *legal question to be handled by the courts. In the meantime, people are illegally being sentenced to prison terms*  
19 *for willful failure to file a tax return and tax evasion for a fictitious tax that was never authorized by the*  
20 *Constitution. Are these people political prisoners, or are they legal prisoners? Is the fraud committed by former*  
21 *Secretary of State by Philander Knox in claiming that the Sixteenth Amendment was properly ratified a legal*  
22 *question or a political question? I assert that it is a legal question. When is ANYONE of character and principal*  
23 *who works for our corrupt government going to take some personal responsibility for this FRAUD and stand up*  
24 *to this injustice at the risk of their own career and describe it for what it is: TREASON?"*

25 Consequently, we *aren't* free and there is *no liberty* so long as there is an IRS, and we need to work *together* diligently to  
26 eliminate the tyranny of the IRS if we want to win our constitutional freedoms back. *If we don't hang together when fighting*  
27 *them, then you can count on the fact that the IRS will ensure that we "hang separately",* and they will compel us at gunpoint  
28 to subsidize our own hanging with our own tax dollars and labor! How is that different from what they did to Jesus by forcing  
29 him to carry his own cross to the hill that they nailed him on?

30 However, we'd also like to emphasize as we did in the preceding section that the biggest reason the government can continue  
31 to oppress us in this way is because of our own legal ignorance, disorganization, laziness, and political apathy, and we have  
32 no one to blame but ourselves for that condition. That is why we say that:

33 *"The price of liberty is eternal vigilance!"*

34 The lack of vigilance on our part is the reason why things have gotten so bad. In fact, given the right tools and information,  
35 you can free yourself from this tyranny. Indeed, knowledge and discipline and study and vigilance are the key to ending this  
36 slavery. That is also why we say:

37 *"Income taxes are stupidity and laziness taxes. Wise and diligent people who know the law don't have to pay!*  
38 *The only thing the IRS does is make it more complex to keep your money, but you can still keep it."*

39 If you don't want to become a political "tax" prisoner or a slave to the IRS, then you have a civic duty as a patriotic Citizen  
40 to watch your government like a hawk and prevent it from becoming corrupt or unethical. That is the focus of the following  
41 Supreme Court Ruling:

42 *"It is not the function of our Government to keep the citizen from falling into error; it is the function of the citizen*  
43 *to keep the government from falling into error."*  
44 *[American Communications Association v. Douds, 339 U.S. 382, 442. (1950) ]*

45 How do we prevent the government from falling into error? We become informed citizens, vote consistently for what we  
46 believe in, protect other's rights by serving on jury duty, and become litigation activists when we see our rights encroached  
47 by the government. When none of this works, it's time to organize into a militia and fight the state. None have described  
48 this approach better than the quote below:

1                   *"In America, freedom and justice have always come from the ballot box, the jury box, and when that fails, the*  
 2                   *cartridge box."*

3                   *[Steve Symms, U.S. Senator, Idaho]*

4 Politicians have already taken away the jury box, by allowing the IRS to deprive us of our property without a jury trial and  
 5 by filtering out informed patriots from serving on jury duty, leaving nothing but ignorant socialist "U.S. citizens" sitting on  
 6 the jury to assist them in their lynching and organized extortion. They have tried to take away the ballot box by convincing  
 7 us that our vote doesn't matter and encouraging political apathy, so that numerous special interests can come in and use their  
 8 minority vote and this political vacuum they created to hijack the government with their bribes and lies and self-seeking votes  
 9 into doing their selfish bidding. The greedy politicians assist these special interests using borrowed money extorted from  
 10 unborn children [future taxation without representation] to bribe the votes and political clout from the rest of the populati on  
 11 they need to perpetuate their tyranny and pad their pockets with inflated government pensions and perks. It's treason and  
 12 it's a quiet but invisible [to most Americans] war fought on the economic front inside of employers, banks, and courtrooms  
 13 across the country every day and the only reason they continue to win is because we continue to be ignorant and apathetic.  
 14 Right now, these same tyrants are also trying to take away the cartridge box, by disarming us and passing restrictive gun  
 15 control laws in direct violation of the Second Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, while telling us the pompous LIE that  
 16 they are doing this to protect us against ourselves. The main reason we need guns is to protect us from THEM! This same  
 17 kind of scandal with gun laws is what happened in England and Canada, and we are next if we aren't vigilant. When are  
 18 people going to wake up? It's frightening to watch people passively and silently standing by as they forfeit their liberties,  
 19 one by one.

20 How should Dr. Roberts have addressed the court in his case? Below is an extremely powerful excerpt from the book by  
 21 Ayn Rand entitled *Atlas Shrugged*. The circumstances were that a Dr. Rearden, who was an entrepreneur and inventor of  
 22 the Rearden Metal, was indicted in court by the government for illegally selling his invention. Listen to what he says as a  
 23 pro per litigant because MAN is this powerful stuff folks!:

24                   *According to the procedure established by directives, cases of this kind were not tried by a jury, but by a panel of*  
 25                   *three judges appointed by the Bureau of Economic Planning and National Resources; the procedure, the*  
 26                   *directives had stated, was to be informal and democratic. The judge's bench had been removed from the old*  
 27                   *Philadelphia courtroom for this occasion, and replaced by a table on a wooden platform; **it gave the room an***  
 28                   ***atmosphere suggesting the kind of meeting where a presiding body puts something over on a mentally retarded***  
 29                   ***membership.***

30                   *One of the judges, acting as prosecutor, had read the charges. "You may now offer whatever plea you wish to*  
 31                   *make in your own defense," he announced.*

32                   *Facing the platform, his voice inflectionless and peculiarly clear, Hank Rearden answered:*

33                   *"I have no defense."*

34                   *"Do you-" The judge stumbled; he had not expected it to be that easy. "Do you throw yourself upon the mercy of*  
 35                   *this court?"*

36                   *"I do not recognize this court's right to try me"."*

37                   *"What?"*

38                   *"I do not recognize this court's right to try me."*

39                   *"But, Mr. Rearden, this is the legally appointed court to try this particular category of crime."*

40                   *"I do not recognize my action as a crime."*

41                   *"But you have admitted that you have broken our regulations controlling the sale of your Metal."*

42                   *"I do not recognize your right to control the sale of my Metal."*

43                   *"Is it necessary for me to point out that your recognition was not required?"*

44                   *"No, I am fully aware of it and I am acting accordingly."*

1 He noted the stillness of the room. **By the rules of the complicated pretense which all those people played for**  
2 **one another's benefit, they should have considered his stand as incomprehensible folly; there should have been**  
3 **rustles of astonishment and derision; there were none; they sat still; they understood.**

4 "Do you mean that you are refusing to obey the law?" asked the judge.

5 **"No. I am complying with the law - to the letter. Your law holds that my life, my work and my property may be**  
6 **disposed of without my consent [this is the foundation of what it means to have a socialist democracy]. Very**  
7 **well, you may now dispose of me without my participation in the matter. I will not play the part of defending**  
8 **myself, where no defense is possible, and I will not simulate the illusion of dealing with a tribunal of justice."**

9 "But Mr. Rearden, the law provides specifically that you are to be given an opportunity to present your side of  
10 the case and to defend yourself."

11 **"A prisoner brought to trial can defend himself only if there is an objective principle of justice recognized by**  
12 **his judges, a principle upholding his rights, which they may not violate and which he can invoke. The law, by**  
13 **which you are trying me, holds that there are no principles, that I have no rights and that you may do with me**  
14 **whatever you please [he and everything he owns is GOVERNMENT PROPERTY, a SLAVE, as part of a**  
15 **socialist democracy]. Very well, Do it.**

16 "Mr. Rearden, the law which you are denouncing is based on the highest principle - the principle of the public  
17 good."

18 **"Who is the public? What does it hold as its good? There was a time when men believed that 'the good' was a**  
19 **concept to be defined by a code of moral values and that no man had the right to seek his good through the**  
20 **violation of the rights of another. If it is now believed that my fellow men may sacrifice me in any manner they**  
21 **please for the sake of whatever they deem to be their own good, if they believe that they may seize my property**  
22 **simply because they need it - well, so does any burglar. There is only this difference: the burglar does not ask**  
23 **me to sanction his act."**

24 A group of seats at the side of the courtroom was reserved for the prominent visitors who had come from New  
25 York to witness the trial. Dagny sat motionless and her face showed nothing but a solemn attention, the attention  
26 of listening with the knowledge that the flow of his words would determine the course of her life. Eddie Willers  
27 sat beside her. James Taggart had not come. Paul Larkin sat hunched forward, his face thrust out, pointed like  
28 an animal's muzzle, sharpened by a look of fear now turning into malicious hatred. Mr. Mowen, who sat beside  
29 him, was a man of greater innocence and smaller understanding; his fear was of a simpler nature; he listened in  
30 bewildered indignation and he whispered to Larkin, "Good God, now he's done it! Now he'll convince the whole  
31 country that all businessmen are enemies of the public good!"

32 "Are we to understand," asked the judge, "that you hold your own interests above the interests of the public?"

33 **"I hold that such a question can never arise except in a society of cannibals."**

34 "What . . . what do you mean?"

35 **"I hold that there is no clash of interests among men who do not demand the unearned and do not practice**  
36 **human sacrifices."**

37 "Are we to understand that if the public deems it necessary to curtail your profits, you do not recognize its right  
38 to do so?"

39 "Why, yes, I do. The public may curtail my profits any time it wishes - by refusing to buy my product."

40 "We are speaking of . . . other methods."

41 **"Any other method of curtailing profits is the method of looters - and I recognize it as such."**

42 "Mr. Rearden, this is hardly the way to defend yourself."

43 "I said that I would not defend myself."

44 "But this is unheard of! Do you realize the gravity of the charge against you?"

45 "I do not care to consider it."

46 "Do you realize the possible consequences of your stand?"

1 "Fully."

2 "It is the opinion of this court that the facts presented by the prosecution seem to warrant no leniency. The penalty  
3 which this court has the power to impose on you is extremely severe."

4 "Go ahead."

5 "I beg your pardon?"

6 "Impose it."

7 The three judges looked at one another. Then their spokesman turned back to Rearden. "This is unprecedented,"  
8 he said.

9 "It is completely irregular," said the second judge. "The law requires you to submit a plea in your own defense.  
10 Your only alternative is to state for the record that you throw yourself upon the mercy of the court."

11 "I do not."

12 "But you have to."

13 "Do you mean that what you expect from me is some sort of voluntary action?"

14 "Yes."

15 "I volunteer nothing."

16 "But the law demands that the defendant's side be represented on the record."

17 "Do you mean that you need my help to make this procedure [at least APPEAR] legal?"

18 "Well, no . . . yes . . . that is, to complete the form."

19 "I will not help you."

20 The third and youngest judge, who had acted as prosecutor, snapped impatiently. "This is ridiculous and unfair.  
21 Do you want to let it look as if a man of your prominence had been railroaded without a -" He cut himself off  
22 short. Somebody at the back of the courtroom emitted a long whistle.

23 "I want", said Rearden gravely, "to let the nature of this procedure appear exactly for what it is. If you need  
24 my help to disguise it - I will not help you."

25 "But we are giving you a chance to defend yourself - and it is you who are rejecting it."

26 "I will not help you to pretend that I have a chance. I will not help you to preserve the appearance of  
27 righteousness where rights are not recognized. I will not help you to preserve an appearance of rationality by  
28 entering a debate in which a gun is the final argument. I choose to be consistent and I  
29 will obey you in the manner you demand. Whatever you wish me to do, I will do it at the point of a gun. If you  
sentence me to jail, you will have to send armed men to carry me there - I will not volunteer to move. If you  
fine me, you will have to seize my property to collect the fine - I will not volunteer to pay it. If you believe you  
have the right to force me - use your guns openly. I will not help you to disguise the nature of your action."

30 "But the law compels you to volunteer a defense."

31 There was laughter at the back of the courtroom.

32 "That is the flaw in your theory, gentlemen," said Rearden gravely, "and I will not help you out of it. If you  
33 choose to deal with men by means of compulsion, do so. But you will discover that you need the voluntary co-  
34 operation of your victims, in many more ways than you can see at present. And your victims should discover  
35 that it is their own volition - which you cannot force - that makes you possible. I choose to be consistent and I  
36 will obey you in the manner you demand. Whatever you wish me to do, I will do it at the point of a gun. If you  
37 sentence me to jail, you will have to send armed men to carry me there - I will not volunteer to move. If you  
38 fine me, you will have to seize my property to collect the fine - I will not volunteer to pay it. If you believe you  
39 have the right to force me - use your guns openly. I will not help you to disguise the nature of your action."

40 The eldest judge leaned forward across the table and his voice became suavely derisive: "You speak as if you  
41 were fighting for some sort of principle, Mr. Rearden, but what you're actually fighting for is only your property,  
42 isn't it?"

1 "Yes, of course. I am fighting for my property. Do you know the kind of principle that represents?"

2 "You pose as a champion of freedom, but it's only the freedom to make money that you're after."

3 "Yes, of course. All I want is the freedom to make money. Do you know what that freedom implies?"

4 "Surely, Mr. Rearden, you wouldn't want your attitude to be misunderstood. You wouldn't want to give support  
5 to the widespread impression that you are a man devoid of social conscience, who feels no concern for the welfare  
6 of his fellows and works for nothing but his own profit."

7 "I work for nothing but my own profit. I earn it."

8 There was a gasp, not of indignation, but of astonishment, in the crowd behind him and silence from the judges  
9 he faced. He went on calmly:

10 "No, I do not want my attitude to be misunderstood. I shall be glad to state it for the record. I am in full agreement  
11 with the facts of everything said about me in the newspapers - with the facts, but not with the evaluation. I work  
12 for nothing but my own profit - which I make by selling a product they need to men who are willing and able to  
13 buy it. I do not produce it for their benefit at the expense of mine; I do not sacrifice my interests to them nor do  
14 they sacrifice theirs to me; we deal as equals by mutual consent to mutual advantage - and I am proud of every  
15 penny that I have earned in this manner. I am rich and I am proud of every penny I own. I made my money by my  
16 own effort, in free exchange and through the voluntary consent of every man I dealt with - the voluntary consent  
17 of those who employed me when I started, the voluntary consent of those who work for me now, the voluntary  
18 consent of those who buy my product. **I shall answer all the questions you are afraid to ask me openly.** Do I  
19 wish to pay my workers more than their services are worth to me? I do not. Do I wish to sell my product for less  
20 than my customers are willing to pay me? I do not. Do I wish to sell it at a loss or give it away? I do not. If this  
21 is evil, do whatever you please about me, according to whatever standards you hold. These are mine. I am earning  
22 my own living, as every honest man must. I refuse to accept as guilt the fact of my own existence and the fact that  
23 I must work in order to support it. I refuse to accept as guilt the fact that I must work in order to support it. I  
24 refuse to accept as guilt the fact that I am able to do it and do it well. I refuse to accept as guilt the fact that I am  
25 able to do it better than most people - the fact that my work is of greater value than the work of my neighbors and  
26 that more men are willing to pay me. I refuse to apologize for my money. If this is evil, make the most of it. If this  
27 is what the public finds harmful to its interest, let the public destroy me. This is my code - and I will accept no  
28 other. I could say to you that I have done more good for my fellow men that you can ever hope to accomplish -  
29 but I will not say it, because I do not seek the good of others as a sanction for my right to exist, nor do I recognize  
30 the good of others as a sanction for my right to exist, nor do I recognize the good of others as a justification for  
31 their seizure of my property or their destruction of my life. **I will not say that the good of others was the purpose**  
32 **of my work - my own good was my purpose, and I despise the man who surrenders his. I could say to you that**  
33 **you do not serve the public good - that nobody's good can be achieved at the price of human sacrifices - that**  
34 **when you violate the rights of one man, you have violated the rights of all, and a public of rightless creatures**  
35 **is doomed to destruction. I could say to you that you will and can achieve nothing but universal devastation -**  
36 **as any looter must, when he runs out of victims.** I could say it, but I won't. **It is not your particular policy that**  
37 **I challenge, but your moral premise. If it were true that men could achieve their good by means of turning**  
38 **some men into sacrificial animals, and I were asked to immolate myself for the sake of creatures who wanted**  
39 **to survive at the price of my blood, if I were asked to serve the interests of society apart from, above and against**  
40 **my own - I would refuse. I would reject it as the most contemptible evil, I would fight it with every power I**  
41 **possess, I would fight the whole of mankind, if one minute were all I could last before I were murdered, I**  
42 **would fight in the full confidence of the justice of my battle and of a living being's right to exist. Let there be**  
43 **no misunderstanding about me. If it is now the belief of my fellow men, who call themselves the public, that**  
44 **their good requires victims, then I say: The public good be damned, I will have no part of it!"**

45 The crowd burst into applause.

46 Rearden whirled around, more startled than his judges. He saw faces that laughed in violent excitement, and  
47 faces that pleaded for help; he saw their silent despair breaking out into the open; he saw the same anger and  
48 indignation as his own, finding release in the wild defiance of their cheering; he saw the looks of admiration and  
49 the looks of hope. There were also the faces of loose-mouthed young men and maliciously unkempt females, the  
50 kind who led the booing in newsreel theaters at any appearance of a businessman on the screen; they did not  
51 attempt a counter-demonstration; they were silent.

52 As he looked at the crowd, people saw in his face what the threats of the judges had not been able to evoke: the  
53 first sign of emotion.

54 It was a few moments before they heard the furious beating of a gavel upon the table and one of the judges yelling:

55 "- or I shall have the courtroom cleared!"



1 As he turned back to the table, Rearden's eyes moved over the visitors' section. His glance paused on Dagny, a  
2 pause perceptible only to her, as if he were saying: **It works.** She would have appeared calm except that her eyes  
3 seemed to have become too large for her face. Eddie Willers was smiling the kind of smile that is a man's substitute  
4 for breaking into tears. Mr. Mowen looked stupefied. Paul Larkin was staring at the floor. There was no  
5 expression on Bertram Scudder's face - or on Lillian's. She sat at the end of a row, her legs crossed, a mink stole  
6 slanting from her right shoulder to her left hip; she looked at Rearden, not moving.

7 In the complex violence of all the things he felt, he had time to recognize a touch of regret and of longing: there  
8 was a face he had hoped to see, had looked for from the start of the session, had wanted to be present more than  
9 any other face around him. But Francisco d'Anconia had not come.

10 "Mr. Rearden," said the eldest judge, smiling affably, reproachfully and spreading his arms, "it is regrettable that  
11 you should have misunderstood us so completely. That's the trouble - that businessmen refuse to approach us in  
12 the spirit of trust and friendship. They seem to imagine that we are their enemies. **Why do you speak of human**  
13 **sacrifices? What made you go to such an extreme? We have no intention of seizing your property or destroying**  
14 **your life. We do not seek to harm your interests. We are fully aware of your distinguished achievements. Our**  
15 **purpose is only to balance social pressures and do justice to all. This hearing is really intended, not as a trial,**  
16 **but as a friendly discussion aimed at mutual understanding and co-operation."**

17 "**I do not co-operate at the point of a gun."**

18 "Why speak of guns? This matter is not serious enough to warrant such references. We are fully aware that the  
19 guilt in this case lies chiefly with Mr. Kenneth Danagger, who instigated this infringement of the law, who exerted  
20 pressure upon you and who confessed his guilt by disappearing in order to escape trial."

21 "No. We did it by equal, mutual, voluntary agreement."

22 "Mr. Rearden," said the second judge, "you may not share some of our ideas, but when all is said and done,  
23 we're all working for the same cause. For the good of the people. We realize that you were prompted to  
24 disregard the legal technicalities by the critical situation of the coal mines and the crucial importance of fuel  
25 to the public welfare."

26 "No. I was prompted by my own profit and my own interests. What effect it had on the coal mines and the  
27 public welfare is for you to estimate. That was not my motive."

28 Mr. Mowen stared dazedly about him and whispered to Paul Larkin, "Something's gone screwy here."

29 "Oh, shut up!" snapped Larkin.

30 "I am sure, Mr. Rearden," said the eldest judge, "that you do not really believe - nor does the public - that we  
31 wish to treat you as a sacrificial victim. If anyone has been laboring under such a misapprehension, we are  
32 anxious to prove that it is not true."

33 The judges retired to consider their verdict. They did not stay out long. They returned to an ominously silent  
34 courtroom - and announced that a fine of \$5,000 was imposed on Henry Rearden, but that the sentence was  
35 suspended.

36 Streaks of jeering laughter ran through the applause that swept the courtroom. The applause was aimed at  
37 Rearden, the laughter - at the judges.

38 Rearden stood motionless, not turning to the crowd, barely hearing the applause. **He stood looking at the judges.**  
39 **There was no triumph in his face, no elation, only the still intensity of contemplating a vision with a bitter**  
40 **wonder that was almost fear. He was seeing the enormity of the smallness of the enemy who was destroying**  
41 **the world. He felt as if, after a journey of years through a landscape of devastation, past the ruins of great**  
42 **factories, the wrecks of powerful engines, the bodies of invincible men, he had come upon the despoiler,**  
43 **expecting to find a giant - and had found a rat eager to scurry for cover at the first sound of a human step.**

44 If this is what has beaten us, he thought, the guilt is ours.

45 He was jolted back into the courtroom by the people pressing to surround him. He smiled in answer to their  
46 smiles, to the frantic, tragic eagerness of their faces; there was a touch of sadness in his smile.

47 "God bless you, Mr. Rearden!" said an old woman with a ragged shawl over her head. "Can't you save us, Mr.  
48 Rearden? They're eating us alive, and it's no use fooling anybody about how it's the rich that they're after - do  
49 you know what's happening to us?"

"Listen, Mr. Rearden," said a man who looked like a factory worker, "it's the rich who're selling us down the river. Tell those wealthy bastards, who're so anxious to give everything away, that when they give away their palaces, they're giving away the skin off our backs."

"I know it," said Rearden.

*The guilt is ours, he thought. If we who were the movers, the providers, the benefactors of mankind, were willing to let the brand of evil be stamped upon us and silently to bear punishment for our virtues - what sort of "good" did we expect to triumph in the world?*

He looked at the people around him. They had cheered him today; they had cheered him by the side of the track of the John Galt Line. But tomorrow they would clamor for a new directive from Wesley Mouch and a free housing project from Orren Boyle, while Boyle's girders collapsed upon their heads. They would do it, because they would be told to forget, as a sin, that which had made them cheer Hank Rearden.

Why were they ready to renounce their highest moments as a sin? Why were they willing to betray the best within them? What made them believe that this earth was a realm of evil where despair was their natural fate? He could not name the reason, but he knew that it had to be named. He felt it as a huge question mark within the courtroom, which it was now his duty to answer.

This was the real sentence imposed upon him, he thought - to discover what idea, what simple idea available to the simplest man, had made mankind accept the doctrines that led it to self-destruction.

"Hank, I'll never think that it's hopeless, not ever again. said Dagny that evening, after the trial. "I'll never be tempted to quit. You've proved that the right always works and always wins -" She stopped, then added "- provided one knows what is the right."

If you would like more information about this marvelous book or the concepts behind it, we refer you to our website at:

Who is John Galt?, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/JohnGalt/JohnGalt.htm>

## **1.10 What Attitude are Christians Expected to Have About This Document?**

This document is provided free to everyone who wants it and was diligently and lovingly prepared in the spirit of Jesus' own words, found in Matt. 23:23:

*"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone."*

You will note that the Pharisees of Jesus time were the equivalent of a special interest group of lawyers who supported the scribes and rabbis in their interpretation of the Jewish law as handed down from the time of Moses. In Jesus' day, this interpretation of the law had become more authoritative and binding than the law itself. This situation repeats itself today, where what lawyers "think" the tax code, which is not "law", says means more than the actual content of the law. Jesus often challenged these traditional interpretations and the minute rules that had been issued to guide the people in every area of their behavior. Today's equivalent of the Pharisees would be the American Bar Association (ABA) and the court system. Hopefully, this helps to make the meaning of God's own words of condemnation above crystal clear.

### **1.10.1 Jesus Christ, The Son of God, was a Tax Protester!**

Many people are surprised to learn that Jesus was, in fact, a tax protester! Here is what the people who knew Jesus said about him at the time in Luke 23:2:

*And they began to accuse Him, saying "We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to pay taxes to Caesar, saying that He Himself is Christ, a King."*  
[Luke 23:2, Bible, NKJV]

Why did the people say this about Jesus? Because on two different occasions which we will describe shortly in the gospel of Matthew, Jesus told his disciples, in effect, that they shouldn't have to pay taxes to the government. Recall that Matthew,

1 who wrote the book of Matthew, was one of Jesus' Apostles. He was a Roman tax collector before he became a disciple. Of  
2 all the Apostles, none understood taxation better than him.

3 An interesting fact for us Christians is that the concept of only taxing foreigners as the Internal Revenue Code requires is  
4 something the founding fathers got right out of the Bible! The federal taxing scheme is and always has been:

5 *"Citizens abroad and foreigners here at home."*

6 Jesus Christ first addressed the tax issue in Matthew, Chapter 17, verse 24 through 27, which read:

7 ***Peter and His Master Pay Their Taxes***

8 *When they [Jesus and Apostle Peter] had come to Capernaum, those [\[collectors\] who received the temple tax](#)  
9 [\[our government has become the modern day false god and Washington, D.C. is our political "temple"\]](#) came to  
10 Peter and said, "[Does your Teacher \[Jesus\] not pay the temple tax?](#)"*

11 *He [Apostle Peter] said, "[Yes](#)." [\[Jesus, our fearless leader as Christians, was a nontaxpayer\]](#)*

12 *And when he had come into the house, Jesus anticipated him, saying, "[What do you think, Simon? From whom](#)  
13 [do the kings \[governments\] of the earth \[lawfully\] take customs or taxes, from their sons \[citizens and subjects\]](#)  
14 [or from strangers \[ "aliens", which are synonymous with "residents" in the tax code, and exclude](#)  
15 ["citizens" \]?"](#)"*

16 *Peter said to Him, "From strangers [["aliens" / "residents"](#)] ONLY. See [26 C.F.R. §1.1-1\(a\)\(2\)\(ii\)](#) and [26 C.F.R.](#)  
17 [§1.1441-1\(c\)\(3\)](#)."*

18 *Jesus said to him, "[Then the sons \[ "citizens" of the Republic, who are all sovereign !\[\]\(4fe57c3593bf1b21d272ae7ac8dfaf77\_img.jpg\) "nationals" and](#)  
19 ["nonresident aliens" under federal law\] are free \[sovereign over their own person and labor. e.g.](#)  
20 [SOVEREIGN IMMUNITY\]](#)."  
21 [\[Matt. 17:24-27, Bible, NKJV\]](#)*

22 The Founders understood because of their Christian faith that "the sons (Citizens) are exempt" and, in their wisdom, designed  
23 our Republic so that the People would be free from direct taxation by the government; so that the day-to-day operations of  
24 the federal government would be funded through indirect excise taxes in the form of duties and tariffs to be paid by foreigners  
25 wishing to sell into our vast markets.

26 One of our readers, in reference to this story, sent us the following question about the Bible passage above, Matt. 17:24-27:

27 *Dear sir*

28 *My uncle is asking me about the bible story:*

29 *Coin in the fish mouth to pay a tax.*

30 *Are you familiar and what does it mean. Of course I will research on my own also.*

31 *Thanks,*

32 *Brett Keith*

33 That anecdote he refers to above comes from the tail end of the passage above at Matt. 17:27. Here was our response:

34 *Brett,*

35 *That's a good question! Thanks for your inquiry. I've read the story. The story you refer to is found in Matt.*  
36 *17:27 at: [http://www.blueletterbible.org/tmp\\_dir/words/1010682599.html](http://www.blueletterbible.org/tmp_dir/words/1010682599.html)*

37 *I mentioned the story in section 1.10.1 in the latest version of [The Great IRS Hoax Book](#).*

38 *The quote goes:*

"Nevertheless, lest we offend them [the tax collectors], go to the sea, cast in a hook, and take the fish that comes up first. And when you have opened its mouth, you will find a piece of money; take that and give it to them for Me and you."

The context of the story is that a tax collector for the temple tax asked Peter if Jesus does NOT pay the tax. Peter the Apostle said "yes" and then Jesus later told him "then the sons (citizens) are free" [exempt] from taxes laid by Kings and governments. I believe Jesus was referring to direct taxes in this case.

The money appeared in the fish's mouth just as Jesus predicted as a gift from nature so that Peter, Jesus disciple, would not offend the tax collector and so that Jesus would not have to pay a direct tax and make Himself into a hypocrite in the process for what He had said earlier in Matt. 17:26 about not paying taxes.

My interpretation of this parable/anecdote is that God provided the money to pay the tax so that Jesus or Peter wouldn't have to pay it as a DIRECT tax. God paid it for them as an INDIRECT tax. That is where the Constitutional prohibition against direct taxes came from, I believe. Our country solved the problem of taxes for our national government the same way as God did in the bible: by giving control of our coastlines and our oceans to the national government, from which the resources in them and the foreign trade that traveled over them would become the main source for federal government revenue under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the Constitution, which empowers the federal government to regulate and tax commerce with foreign nations. I believe the fish symbolizes the foreigners who want to trade with us. The hook, I believe, symbolizes the U.S. customs department and the taxable privilege of trading in our country granted by our government to foreign nations. The money in the fish's mouth is the indirect excise taxes and duties that are paid on goods imported into our country (foreign commerce) by the foreigners (fish) usually coming in by boat over our oceans and coastlines.

Here's the way Alexander Hamilton described it in the Federalist Paper #36:

"The more intelligent adversaries of the new Constitution admit the force of this reasoning; but they qualify their admission by a distinction between what they call INTERNAL and EXTERNAL taxation. The former they would reserve to the State governments; the latter, which they explain into commercial imposts, or rather duties on imported articles, they declare themselves willing to concede to the federal head.", Alexander Hamilton, Federalist 36

Family Guardian Fellowship

One frequent comment we hear from Christians about the tax issue is that Jesus, in Matthew 22:15-22, advocated paying taxes by telling us that we should "render to Caesar that which is Caesar's". Here is the scripture:

"Then the Pharisees went and plotted how they might entangle Him in His talk. And they sent to Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that you are true, and teach the way of God in truth; nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men.

Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?

But Jesus perceived their wickedness and said, "Why do you test Me, you hypocrites? Show Me the tax money." So they brought Him a denarius.

And he said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?"

They said to Him, "Caesar's." And He said to them, "**Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.**"

When they had heard these words, they marveled, and left Him and went their way.

What exactly belongs to Caesar?

"Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the Lord your God, also the earth with all that is in it." [Deuteronomy 10:14, Bible, NKJV]

So what is left that really belongs to Caesar? NOTHING is the answer! Interestingly, the word "Render" in the original Greek and as used above actually means to "give back". Here is the way one scholar put it:

But note how some other translations erroneously translate the verb in the citation below:

Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. -NKJ

1 Give to Caesar what is Caesar's, and to God what is God's.—NIV

2 Give to Caesar what belongs to him. But everything that belongs to God must be given to God.—NLT

3 Give therefore to the emperor the things that are the emperor's, and to God the things that are God's.--  
4 NRSV

5 You see, the versions of the Bible above have translated the operative verb as "to render" or "to give." That is  
6 to say, the presumption is that Caesar and God are to be "given to" in the same fashion. But only the  
7 International Standard Version brings forth the marvelously subtle elements of the Greek verb here. The proper  
8 word choice is not "give" but rather "give back." And there is a world of difference.

9 Jesus was saying that everything belongs to God in the first place. In a very real sense, God is "owed" everything  
10 that we have. He is our source. But in the Roman world, Caesar was God. In these passages, to "give back" is  
11 the proper translation in regards to obligations to God and to Caesar for the audience to whom Jesus was  
12 speaking.<sup>4</sup>

13 This puts an entirely new meaning to Jesus' words above. There was a reason Jesus said "give back", and why the bible  
14 translators working for King James distorted Jesus' words to pacify the King who wanted Christians to pay their taxes to that  
15 King. I believe Jesus was also saying we shouldn't use anything that had a graven image on it, such as a coin with Caesar's  
16 picture, because that would constitute idolatry by turning our government into some kind of god to be worshipped every time  
17 we paid for something. Instead, I believe Jesus was telling us that we should give all the money the government prints back  
18 to them and develop our own currency based on gold or barter that has value because of its own intrinsic worth and scarcity  
19 rather than the edict of some bungling and dishonest government bureaucrat. The foundation of this belief is found in Psalm  
20 118:8-9, which we also mentioned in the previous section:

21 "It is better to trust the Lord  
22 Than to put confidence in man.  
23 It is better to trust in the Lord  
24 Than to put confidence in princes."  
25 [Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]

26 Now that we really understand the true significance of what Jesus said, is it any wonder why He was publicly criticized and  
27 scorned by both the government and the chief priests of the church and why He was crucified? Luke 23:2 says it all!  
28 Furthermore, Jesus told us that we should be encouraged rather than discouraged by His example and what people did to  
29 Him for telling the truth about taxes and sin and God. The priests crucified Him for taking a stance against sin and taxes and  
30 the establishment and yet through His actions, He transcended this world. In Mark 8:38, Jesus said:

31 For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him the Son of Man  
32 also will be ashamed when He comes in the glory of His Father with the holy angels.  
33 [Mark 8:38, Bible, NKJV]

34 So what Jesus said here is that if we are ashamed of his stance on sin and taxes, and if we are too cowardly to confront evil  
35 in our own government and be punished and ostracized by the world in the process for telling it like it is just as He Himself  
36 did and was crucified for, then when it's our turn to go to Heaven, then He will be ashamed of us and won't vouch for us in  
37 front of God!

38 Edmund Burke also said something along these lines as well:

39 "The true danger is when liberty is nibbled away, for expedients, and by parts ... the only thing necessary for evil  
40 to triumph is for good men to do nothing."  
41 [Edmund Burke]

42 Jesus' life should be an inspiration and an encouragement to tax honesty fighters everywhere because of the way he was  
43 treated. On a number of occasions, people in the Bible thought he was crazy! Below is one example, where Jesus' own  
44 mother and relatives said he was crazy:

45 "But when His own people heard about this, they went out to lay hold of Him, for they said, 'He is out of His  
46 mind.'"  
47 [Mark 3:21, Bible, NKJV]

<sup>4</sup> See *Why No One is Required to File Tax Returns*, by William Conklin, 1996, Davidson Press, ISBN 189183391X, p. viii.

You will likely experience the same kind reaction from many of the people you know as you try to share the truth about the income tax fraud perpetuated by the U.S. government. After you have read this book and learned the truth for yourself, people may persecute you and label you as a crackpot, like they did in the new testament as revealed in God's own words:

*"A prophet is not without honor except in his own country and in his own house."  
[Matt. 13:57]*

We certainly have been treated this way, but we have never allowed that to discourage us. It is precisely this kind of negative and fearful reaction by people that was the reason that Jesus chose to speak to people in parables, because He didn't want to alienate or offend people with the truths He was trying to share. We can take a similar approach by providing testimonials, anecdotes, and stories about other people we know who have successfully gotten out of the tax system using the recommendations in this book. We shouldn't be afraid to share the truth with people, because Jesus certainly wasn't:

*"Why are you so fearful? How is it that you have no faith?"  
[Mark 5:40, Bible, NKJV]*

One reader actually wrote a free electronic book about the subject of this section. You can read his free book below:

*Jesus of Nazareth: Illegal Tax Protester*, Ned Netterville

Link 1: <http://www.scribd.com/doc/2421538/Jesus-Tax-Protestor#scribd>

Link 2: <http://www.docstoc.com/docs/20066828/Jesus-of-Nazareth-Illegal-Tax-Protest>

Link 3: [http://my.mmosite.com/5317812/blog/item/jesus\\_of\\_nazareth\\_illegal\\_tax\\_protestor\\_dec\\_2006\\_pdf.html](http://my.mmosite.com/5317812/blog/item/jesus_of_nazareth_illegal_tax_protestor_dec_2006_pdf.html)

### **1.10.2 The Fifth Apostle Jesus Called and the First "Sinners" Called to Repentance Were Tax Collectors**

We read in the Bible, in the gospel of Mark, in chapter 2, that the **fifth** Apostle Jesus called was a Publican and a *tax collector*. We learn that Matthew (also called *Levi*) was called by Jesus to be an Apostle in Mark. 2:14:

*As He passed by, He saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the tax office. And He said to him, "Follow Me." So he arose and followed Him.  
[Mark 2:14, Bible, NKJV]*

In Matthew 4:18-20, we learned that the first four Apostles were Simon, Andrew, James, and John. Recall that Matthew (Levi) the tax collector wrote the first gospel or book of the New Testament (Matthew), and he also devoted more attention to talking about taxes than any of the other Apostles in this gospel (see Matt. 17:24-27, Matt 22:15-22). Could this be where the number of the Fifth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution came from? Sometimes we wonder! After Jesus called Matthew, he dined together with Matthew and several tax collectors and sinners. Here is the story from Mark 2:16-17:

*And when the scribes and Pharisees saw Him eating with **the tax collectors and sinners**, they said to His disciples, "How is it that He eats and drinks with tax collectors and sinners?"*

*When Jesus heard it, He said to them:*

*"Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance."  
[Mark 2:16-17, Bible, NKJV]*

Did you notice that Jesus sought out the tax collector and not the other way around? Jesus said He was here to help sinners and not the righteous, and He was implying here that the tax collectors were sinners. When He talked about tax collectors and sinners, He used them in the same sentence, as if to imply that they were synonymous. Interestingly, *tax collectors were among the very first sinners Jesus met with and called to repentance!* Collecting taxes apparently has always been a sinful, immoral, and unethical business, even back in Jesus' time.

Our interpretation of the above anecdote is that we believe Jesus was also warning us that we should be vigilant to try to maintain a tax collection system that is lawful, moral, honorable, sinless, and fair. One way we should try to do this by ministering to, helping, befriending, and reforming IRS agents, for instance, by spending time with them like Jesus did. Why? Because it will be much more difficult for them to hurt us and still have a conscience. If they don't know us, they can conveniently depersonalize us by referring to everyone as "taxpayers" or by using our Social Security Number instead of our name. Once depersonalized, we are then ruthlessly abused, harassed, and intimidated with computers, anonymous

1 correspondence, and legal chicanery by our own government. This was the same thing the Nazis did to the Jews..referring  
 2 to them as Jews instead of as human beings. On the other hand, would you as an IRS agent do that to someone you know by  
 3 first name and respect? In a sense, we have to become “Hogan” from the television show “Hogan’s Heroes” when dealing  
 4 with the Gestapo IRS! The IRS is Colonel Klink and we are Hogan, and our job is to have as much fun with the Colonel as  
 5 we can! Disarm him with our wit and wisdom and humor.

6 Another way to view this is that Jesus was here to set the example or role model of how to behave. The first area of ministry  
 7 He had was to try to reform the tax collectors through preaching and his presence and example. Why shouldn’t we follow  
 8 that example and try to reform the tax collection system and call tax collectors to repentance like Jesus did? Some people  
 9 would say it is because we shouldn’t “judge”, but this is a mistake because *Jesus never said we shouldn’t judge. He said (in*  
 10 *Matt. 7:1-7) that we should avoid judging only if we don’t want to be judged ourselves!* If you don’t mind being judged  
 11 because you have your own act together FIRST and you are judging for the benefit of God and not yourself, then go ahead  
 12 and judge, but do it **righteously** (but not self-righteously!). Here is the foundation of why we believe this right from the  
 13 Bible:

14 *“Ye shall do no unrighteousness in judgment: thou shalt not respect the person of the poor nor honor the person*  
 15 *of the mighty: but in righteousness shalt thou judge thy neighbor.”*  
 16 *[Lev. 19:15]*

17 *“The lips of the righteous nourish many, but fools die for lack of judgment.”*  
 18 *[Prov. 10:21, NIV]*

19 *“Open your mouth, judge righteously, and plead the cause of the poor and the needy.”*  
 20 *[Prov. 31:9]*

21 *“Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or*  
 22 *an occasion to fall in his brother’s way.”*

23 *[Rom. 14:13]*

24 *COMMENT: Do you think forcing a person to pay 50% of their income as taxes to an idolatrous government*  
 25 *puts a stumbling block in your brother’s way? ...WE DO!]*

26 As Jesus explained in the Parable of the Talents found in Matthew 25:14-30, God expects us to be good stewards over our  
 27 government and the tax money that we give our government. That is the commission we have from God Himself to ensure  
 28 that the IRS behaves honorably, ethically, and morally in all its dealings with everyone within its jurisdiction and outside its  
 29 jurisdiction. Jesus Himself commanded us to judge righteously when he said this to one of His Apostles:

30 *“Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.”*  
 31 *[John 7:24]*

32 Does it sound here like Jesus was saying **NOT** to judge? Absolutely not! If you would like to learn more about judgment  
 33 and how to judge righteously, we refer you to section 3.6 of our Family Constitution, which you can download from our  
 34 website at <http://famguardian.org/>. The essence of judging righteously is the following, as explained by Jesus in John 5:30:

35 *“I can Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because I do not seek My own will*  
 36 *but the will of the Father.”*

37 *[John 5:30, Bible, NKJV]*

38 Therefore, if we are constantly seeking God’s will, as revealed in the Bible, in all our dealings with the government and the  
 39 IRS, and not our own self-enrichment, then we are assured by God that we are judging the situation righteously and acting  
 40 righteously. Another way of saying this is that if there is no conflict of interest in what we are advocating and we are seeking  
 41 the fulfillment of God’s will as He expresses it to us in the Bible and in our prayers, then we are doing the right thing and we  
 42 commit no sin. Jesus confirmed this Himself in Mark 8:35-37:

43 *For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and the gospel’s will save*  
 44 *it. For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in*  
 45 *exchange for his soul?*

46 What Jesus was alluding to here is a concept that I call “The Let Go Principle”:

47 *Whenever you want something, seek God’s will FIRST and either nothing or the opposite of what you want and*  
 48 *you will usually get it!*

Below are some examples from the Bible of the paradoxical “Let Go Principle” expounded by Jesus Himself:

1. Luke 18:9-14: Parable of the Pharisee and the Tax Collector. Jesus said everyone who humbles himself will be exalted and he who exalts himself will be humbled:

*“Two men went up to the temple to pray, one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector.*

*The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, ‘God, I thank You that I am not like other men—extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this tax collector.*

*‘I fast twice a week; I give tithes of all that I possess.’*

*“And the tax collector, standing afar off, would not so much as raise his eyes to heaven, but beat his breast, saying, ‘God, be merciful to me a sinner!’*

*I tell you, this man [the tax collector] went down to his house justified rather than the other; for **everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.**”*  
[Luke 18:9-14, Bible, NKJV]

2. John 12:24-25, Jesus said anyone who loves his life will lose it, and anyone who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life:

*“Most assuredly I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it produces much grain.*

**He who loves his life will lose it, and he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life.**”  
[John 12:24-25, Bible, NKJV]

3. Matt 20:25-28: Jesus said he who wants to be greatest among men should be a servant of all, not a dictator or a tyrant:

*“You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over them. **Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave**---just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.”*  
[Matthew 20:25-28, Bible, NKJV]

4. Luke 12:22-34: Jesus said that we should seek God first and everything else will be taken care of. He said if we have anxiety about what we own or what we will eat tomorrow, then instead of attacking the problem directly and seeking after riches to feed ourselves tomorrow, seek God, and God will supply all our needs: In short, what Jesus said here was that **you can solve your problems by not worrying about them and trusting God to provide!**

*“Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; nor about the body, what you will put on.*

*Life is more than food, and the body is more than clothing.*

...

*And which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? If you then are not able to do the least [honor and obey God], why are you anxious for the rest?...”*

Below are just a few real world examples of *The Let Go Principle* in action, and it’s fascinating to watch how it operates. History has shown that it always works:

- If you want a tax refund for yourself, then focus more on doing what’s right and following God and the law rather than getting your refund and maximizing your “cost-benefit ratio”. When your case gets in front of a judge or a jury, they will focus on the fact that you are a person of conscience who is unselfish, principled and will do the right thing at any cost, and they will not only see that but respect you for it and ultimately take your side. On the other hand, if all you ever talk about is money and how you have been cheated rather than everyone else but you being cheated, they probably won’t listen and will side with the government.
- If you want blessing for yourself in your life, then seek God’s will and not your own. See Matt. 6:33.



3. If you want a loan from the bank, dress nicely as though you have plenty of money and present yourself as though you don't really need or want money but some outside force is causing you to have to get it and not your own will. For instance, you need it to help a relative or to help your children or your church, but only if this is really the case.
4. If you want a spouse or companion of the opposite sex, then just enjoy yourself and quit looking for one. Find an activity you enjoy and other people who enjoy it will meet you and forge a friendship that will blossom into a marriage eventually! This is called playing hard to get and most females know exactly how this works because it is one of the best weapons and best kept secrets as part of the dating game!
5. If you want your children to love you as a parent, then let go and quit trying to control and manipulate them. Give them room to develop the talents and abilities God gifted them with and nurture and encourage that growth in a way that will benefit them, rather than trying to mold them into something you want them to be but which God never intended.

Christian humor is even built around the let go principle. Below are just a few Christian jokes that point out the irony of being a Christian, and how we sometimes have to seek the opposite of what we want to get it!:

1. Give God what's right -- not what's left.
2. Man's way leads to a hopeless end -- God's way leads to an endless hope.
3. A lot of kneeling will keep you in good standing.
4. He who kneels before God can stand before anyone.
5. In the sentence of life, the devil may be a comma--but never let him be the period.
6. Don't put a question mark where God puts a period.
7. Are you wrinkled with burden? Come to the church for a face-lift.
8. When praying, don't give God instructions - just report for duty.
9. Don't wait for six strong men to take you to church.
10. We don't change God's message -- His message changes us.
11. The church is prayer-conditioned.
12. When God ordains, He sustains.
13. WARNING: Exposure to the Son may prevent burning.
14. Plan ahead -- It wasn't raining when Noah built the ark.
15. Most people want to serve God, but only in an advisory position.
16. Suffering from truth decay? Brush up on your Bible.
17. Exercise daily -- walk with the Lord.
18. Never give the devil a ride -- he will always want to drive.
19. Nothing else ruins the truth like stretching it.
20. Compassion is difficult to give away because it keeps coming back.
21. He who angers you controls you.
22. Worry is the darkroom in which negatives can develop.
23. Give Satan an inch & he'll be a ruler.
24. Be ye fishers of men -- you catch them & He'll clean them.
25. God doesn't call the qualified, He qualifies the called.
26. Read the Bible -- It will scare the hell out of you.

### 1.10.3 The FIRST to Be Judged By God Will Be Those Who Took The Mark of the Beast: The Socialist (Social) Security Number

As you will learn later, in section 2.8.7 entitled “The Socialist (Social) Security Number, Mark of the Beast!”, the Social Security Number the government assigns to you, sometimes within seconds after you are born (see section 2.8.7.1) is called the “Mark of the Beast” in Revelation 13:16-18. Elsewhere in the same book of Revelation found in the Bible, we find that the first “Bowl Judgment” will occur against those who accepted this sinful mark (SSN):

*First Bowl*

*Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, “Go and pour out the bowls of the wrath of God on the earth” So the first went and poured out his bowl upon the earth, and **a foul and loathsome sore came upon the men who had the mark of the beast [SSN] and those who worshipped his image.***

*[Revelation 16:1-2, Bible, NKJV]*

What was the “image” of the beast that people worshipped? We believe the image of the beast is found on the paper money the government prints: the graven image of our politicians on the money and idolatry that the government and the people who make up the government represent. Jesus talked about this very subject in Matthew 22:15-22, where when Jesus was asked by the Pharisees if we should pay taxes, in response, He asked for a coin (a denarius) from them and then He said

1 “Whose image is this?”.

2 **This is the image**.. the image of man and the worthless money he prints and all the vain and very temporal things it buys:  
3 hedonistic pleasures, attractive but duplicitous companions, drugs, sin, and strife born of greed and selfishness. This vanity  
4 allows Satan to deceive and mislead many, which ultimately destroys lives, families, churches, and nations. It also destroys  
5 our salvation if we put money and our own vanity and personal gain above God in our priority list (see the First commandment  
6 in the Ten Commandments found in Exodus 20 in the Bible).

#### 7 **1.10.4 Our Obligations as Christians**

8 “When they took the fourth amendment, I was silent because I don't deal drugs.  
9 When they took the sixth amendment, I kept quiet because I know I'm innocent.  
10 When they took the second amendment, I said nothing because I don't own a gun.  
11 Now they've come for the first amendment, and I can't say anything at all.”  
12 [Tim Freeman, tsf@cs.cmu.edu]

13 The thing Christians need to ask themselves when they want a confirmation of whether the ideas advocated in this document  
14 are biblical in the context of “rendering to Caesar that which is Caesar's” (see Matt 15:21), is:

15 “Who determines what is Caesar's? Is it the law or is it the arbitrary whims of individual rulers or IRS agents  
16 who are acting illegally and selfishly disregarding the law and the U.S. Constitution and the will of the people?”

17 As we have pointed out repeatedly throughout this document, we are advocating that Christians obey human government  
18 when it does not interfere with their religious beliefs or the law or individual rather than collective rights and when it does  
19 not prevent them from putting God first in their life. Below is the main scripture that talks about our responsibilities to human  
20 government, 1 Peter 2:13-17:

21 “Submit yourself to every ordinance of man [which is] for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as supreme, or to  
22 governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do  
23 good. For it is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men--as free,  
24 yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God.

25 Honor all people. Love the brotherhood, Fear God. Honor the king.”

26 [1 Peter 2:13-17, Bible, NKJV]

27 The above scripture doesn't talk about laws that aren't for the Lords sake, but the implications are clear: disobey them. And  
28 when we have to disobey man's laws in order to obey God's laws, this is called “conflict of personal laws” in the legal field.  
29 We are to honor God first (Exodus 20:3), God's law second, man's law third, and the people in the government who obey  
30 both God's law and man's law third (1 Peter 2:13-17). We are a country and a society of laws and not men and those are  
31 our biblical priorities. Any government official who does not observe EITHER God's law first OR man's law second does  
32 not deserve our obedience or cooperation and we have a duty and obligation to civil disobedience to that official. Even the  
33 Declaration of Independence says so!

34 But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce  
35 them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide  
36 new Guards for their future security.

37 As a matter of fact, this country wouldn't exist if a majority of the people who founded it didn't believe that very thing—they  
38 exercised civil disobedience to tyrants in Britain because of unjust laws! Jesus did the same thing against the Pharisees  
39 (priests), the lawyers, and the Publicans (politicians) in his time. Here is what He said to the Pharisees, and you will note  
40 that He accused them of being hypocrites because they ignored the injustice of their own government! (read the whole passage  
41 yourself in Matthew 23:13-36, but here is an excerpt):

42 “But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you  
43 neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.

44 [...]

1 ***Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay***  
 2 ***tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the***  
 3 ***weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith.***  
 4 ***These you ought to have done, without leaving the others***  
 5 ***undone.***

6 [...]

7 ***Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like***  
 8 ***whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly,***  
 9 ***but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness.***

10 ***Even so, you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside***  
 11 ***you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.***

12 [...]

13 *Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt. Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation*  
 14 *of hell? Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify,*  
 15 *and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, that on you may come all*  
 16 *the righteous blood shed on the earth..."*

17 Jesus also criticized especially lawyers in Luke 11:52 (see the beginning of chapter 3 for many more quotes like that below):

18 ***"Woe to you lawyers! for you have taken away the keys of knowledge; you***  
 19 ***did not enter yourselves, and you hindered those who were entering.*** [Luke  
 20 11:52, INTERPRETATION: *woe unto lawyers who write a law to deliberately be confusing or who use or*  
 21 *interpret a law that is written in a confusing way to hide the truth or deceive people for their own selfish gain]*

22 What was this "key of knowledge" that Jesus was talking about above? It is our language. The very words we use to  
 23 communicate. Using deceptive legal definitions that conflict with our common understanding of how our government  
 24 operates, lawyers have destroyed our ability to describe and understand and influence what our government does on our  
 25 behalf. They have hid the truth and interfered with our sovereignty using definitions! They have used legalese to elevate  
 26 their profession to the level of a "priesthood" that only they understand. We believe that what Jesus was saying here is that  
 27 we should be leery of lawyers because they try to control and manipulate us by keeping us ignorant and afraid using their  
 28 deceptive "legalese". Lawyers, and judges, most of whom used to be lawyers, use deceptive language to enslave and  
 29 intimidate us. Jesus was saying that we should NEVER ignore injustice, and especially when it is perpetrated by our own  
 30 government or as a result of the laws that we need to take part in creating in order to ensure that they are just.

31 If we are seen as good by our neighbors, pay our church tithe, and never hurt anyone, we will still be hypocrite in Jesus' eyes  
 32 if we ignore the more important matters of the laws made by our own government, such as justice and mercy. If we ignore  
 33 injustice accomplished by our agents in government operating on our behalf, then we will be no better than David in the  
 34 Bible was when he had Uriah killed by one of his agents: a sinner responsible for the sinful acts of another accomplished in  
 35 his name.<sup>5</sup> This is where the whole notion of being an informed and involved citizen originates in our American society and  
 36 why our Founding Fathers put it there. Delivering justice (which is another way or more correctly saying stopping injustice)  
 37 was the very reason that God sent His son Jesus down to earth!:

38 *Behold! My Servant whom I uphold, my Elect One in whom My soul delights! I have put My Spirit upon Him;*  
 39 ***He will bring forth justice to the Gentiles.*** *He will not cry out, nor raise His voice, nor cause His voice to be*  
 40 *heard in the street. ...He will bring forth justice for truth. He will not fail nor be discouraged, till He has*  
 41 ***established justice in the earth; and the coastlands shall wait for His [God's] law.*** *Thus says God the Lord,*  
 42 *who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread forth the earth and that which comes from it, who*

<sup>5</sup> See 2 Samuel 11:1-27 for details on the story of David and Uriah.

1 gives breath to the people on it, and spirit to those who walk on it: "**I, the Lord, have called You in righteousness,**  
 2 **and will hold Your hand; I will keep You and give You as a covenant to the people, as a light to the Gentiles,**  
 3 **to open blind eyes, to bring out [IRS] prisoners from the prison, those who sit in darkness from the prison**  
 4 **house. I am the Lord, that is My name; and My glory I will not give to another, nor My praise to carved**  
 5 **images.** Behold, the former things have come to pass, and new things I declare; before they spring forth I tell  
 6 you of them"  
 7 [Isaiah 42:1-9, Bible, NKJV]

8 This is where our authority and mandate to vote, to sit on a jury, to run for political office, and to serve in the military comes  
 9 from...right from God! We have a commission, as ambassadors of God, citizens of heaven and *not* earth, and followers of  
 10 Jesus Christ to execute justice and oppose injustice. Without our involvement, injustice will prevail because greedy special  
 11 interests will come into the democratic vacuum created by our apathy and political inattentiveness and they will hijack our  
 12 government for their own benefit and to our injury. We must be *involved* at every level of politics to defend our liberties  
 13 successfully and expand and ensure God's dominion here on earth. We'll be just as bad as the Pharisees who Jesus criticized  
 14 above if we don't act on and try to correct injustice by our *agents serving* us in government, and there is no place where more  
 15 injustice occurs in our country's laws on a larger scale than the way that federal income taxes are illegally enforced by the  
 16 IRS.

17 People say that Jesus loved us, but He was also a very principled man who would probably be described as the most politically  
 18 incorrect person around if He were active in politics today! See the following for proof:

Jesus Is an Anarchist, James Redford  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/JesusAnarchist.htm>

19 Shouldn't Jesus' behavior be an example to us all? Isn't loving really about telling the **truth** regardless of the personal  
 20 cost? Doesn't it say in 1 Cor. 13: 6 that

21 *"Love...does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in truth.."*

22 Do you think that people who rejoice about truth *don't* talk about it or are *afraid* to talk about it for fear of being politically  
 23 incorrect?

24 The book of Isaiah, in Chapter 58 defines what it means to truly worship our God and defines our biblical priorities. The  
 25 scenario in that chapter is that God's people want to know why their prayers and deeds are not recognized or rewarded by  
 26 their God.

27 *1 Tell My people their transgression*  
 28 *And the house of Jacob their sins.*  
 29 *...*  
 30 *2 They ask of Me the ordinances of justice;*  
 31 *They take delight in approaching God.*  
 32 *'Why have we fasted,' they say, 'and You have not seen?'*  
 33 *3 Why have we afflicted our soul, and You take no notice?'*

34 God responded:

35 *3 "In fact, in the day of your fast you find pleasure,*  
 36 *And exploit all your laborers.*  
 37 *4 Indeed you fast for strife and debate,*  
 38 *And to strike with the fist of wickedness.*

39 *...*

40 *5 Is it a fast that I have chosen,*  
 41 *A day for a man to afflict his soul?*  
 42 *...*  
 43 *Would you call this a fast,*  
 44 *And an acceptable day to the Lord?*  
 45

46 **6 Is this not the fast that I [God] have chosen:**  
 47 **To loose the bonds of wickedness,**

1 ***To undo the heavy burdens,***  
 2 ***To let the oppressed go free,***  
 3 ***And that you break every yoke?***

4 *Is it not to share your bread with the hungry,*  
 5 *And that you bring to your house the poor who are cast out;*  
 6 ...

7 It's pretty clear that ***God is saying here that fighting injustice ought to be the main goal our religion and our worship.*** He  
 8 is saying that ***our religion is vain and hypocritical if we aren't focusing on eliminating injustice in our society,*** starting  
 9 with "undo[ing] heavy burdens" and "let[ting] the oppressed go free". Here's another example of God's attitude on this  
 10 subject:

11 *"Thus says the Lord: 'Execute judgment in the morning; and deliver him who is plundered [illegally by the IRS]*  
 12 *out of the hand of the oppressor, lest my fury go forth like fire and burn so that no one can quench it, because of*  
 13 *the evil of your doings.'*  
 14 *[Jeremiah 21:12, Bible, NKJV]*

15 What heavier and more oppressive burden could there be to individuals and society than an unjust and illegal and usurious  
 16 income tax and a government that extorts and intimidates people to pay a tax they don't owe that eats up more than half of  
 17 their income? As a matter of fact, ***we don't see any difference between modern-day slavery to the income tax and the slavery***  
 18 ***of the Jews to the Egyptians, do you?*** Wasn't Moses' freeing of the Jewish slaves from the Egyptians (in Exodus) one of the  
 19 most glorious and legendary tales in the bible? Weren't the Jewish slaves afraid to leave Egypt because of what might happen  
 20 to them so they murmured against Moses? Isn't this very reluctance to confront evil and stay in the "comfort zone" the reason  
 21 that people in today's society won't try to escape slavery to the government tax by refusing to pay and refusing to accept  
 22 government services? Instead, people will murmur against those who do talk of justice and liberation, and warn them that  
 23 they might end up in prison! When they were finally free, didn't the Jews practice idolatry to a golden calf in the wilderness?  
 24 We were once a free country without income taxes but now hasn't Socialist Security and Government in general become ***our***  
 25 ***golden calf or god?*** The Israelites didn't like hearing that they must cast away their idols and I don't expect that you will  
 26 either, but it's true and speaking the truth is what love is all about.

27 Have we become a society of idolatrous cowards who lack the virtues of our forefathers and don't deserve the freedom we  
 28 have because we refuse to take risks and confront the evil and oppressive beast of our increasingly corrupt socialist  
 29 government?

30 *"They that can give up essential liberty to obtain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety."*  
 31 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

32 What more noble and righteous act of worship of our God could there be both for our forefathers and for us than to fight  
 33 slavery to the oppressive income tax with every ounce of our strength until the day we die based on the massive injustice and  
 34 oppression it wreaks in our society? The leading cause of marital conflict and divorce is arguments over money, and most of  
 35 the time it's because there isn't enough of it to go around. Does the IRS help that situation? Let's list all the things that  
 36 happen in our society, mainly because of illegal enforcement of the income tax by the IRS:

- 37 1. Americans of faith who are Christians can't afford to tithe to their church, because the government takes over half of  
 38 their income. They are then ashamed to go to church and will stay away from it as a result because they feel guilty. This  
 39 alienation from God produces conflict, anxiety, and eventually corrupts the morals of the family.
- 40 2. Families are destroyed because of conflict over the fact that there isn't enough money because most of it (over 50%) is  
 41 going to the IRS.
- 42 3. Families can't support their old-age grandparents because of the amount of income taxes they pay. They are then forced  
 43 to rely on a Social Security program that is a Ponzi scheme that most working people expect will be bankrupt before they  
 44 have a chance to collect.
- 45 4. Parents can't afford to send their children to college. Instead they have to depend on government grants or scholarships  
 46 or loans, and the liberal universities that give them corrupt the morals of their children. Their children also have to leave  
 47 town to go to colleges offering these grants and loans, which means they are outside the influence of their parents at a  
 48 very vulnerable point in their life and are more easily corrupted.
- 49 5. Most mothers, who used to stay home before the second world war, now have to go into the workplace to make up for  
 50 all the income that is extorted from their working husband, leaving a latch-key environment for their children because

1 they can't be home. Television then raises the children and they get in a lot more trouble during the two or three hours  
2 from the time they get out of school and the time at least one parent is home from work.

3 Here is what Jesus said about His role here on earth in Matt. 10:34-36, and keep in mind that He is our example and our role  
4 model as Christians:

5 *"Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. **I did not come to bring peace on earth, but a sword.***

6 *For I have come to set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against  
7 her mother-in-law; and a man's enemies will be those of his own household."*  
8 *[Matt. 10:34-36, Bible, NKJV]*

9 In the metaphor above, we like to think of the "sword" as Truth and Righteousness. What are we supposed to use the sword  
10 against? The answer is injustice and oppression in our society, starting with our government's illegal enforcement of the  
11 Internal Revenue Code.

12 We as Christians really need to rethink how we worship our God because the church has been silent about the biggest source  
13 of injustice and oppression in modern day society...income taxes. Instead, like the story in Isaiah 58, the church has become  
14 more a means of personal entertainment, hypocrisy, and vanity than it has become the glorious and eternal fountain of justice  
15 and mercy and truth that our God intended! Instead of being the *bride* of Christ, many churches have become the hedonistic  
16 *prostitute* of Christ. In our selfishness and shortsightedness and impatience, the Christian church has become like the poor  
17 steward in the parable of the talents in Matthew 25:14-30, who got only one talent because he lacked faith and could not be  
18 entrusted with more. Churches have cowered in the face of the IRS and our government and made themselves politically  
19 irrelevant forces because they are afraid to lose a tax exempt status they never needed if they had just studied the tax code!

20 *"One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."*  
21 *[Proverbs 28:9, Bible, NKJV]*

22 I'm sure God will have some angry words to say about that kind of ignorance, indifference, sin of omission, and cowardice  
23 on judgment day! The first people He will judge, according to the book of Revelation, will be hypocrites like this who took  
24 the Mark of the Beast (the Socialist Security Number). As Eddie Kahn describes it:

25 *"Our attitudes should be like Paul's, who told the church at Corinth in 1 Corinthians 16:13, 'Watch, stand fast  
26 in the faith, be brave, be strong.' I believe the following statement with all my heart..."*

27 ***THERE WILL BE NO WIMPS IN HEAVEN!!***<sup>6</sup>

28 It is impossible for a believer to be a good Christian and a bad Citizen at the same time. As children of God, our responsibility  
29 to human government is threefold:

- 30 1. We are to follow what the Bible says about politics and how to elect or support political leaders. See:  
31 1.1. *Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers*, Form #13.013  
32 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
33 1.2. *Christian Citizenship Training Course*, Forms #12.007 through 12.009  
34 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 35 2. We are to recognize and accept that the powers that be are ordained by God. "*Let every soul be subject to the*  
36 *governing authorities[sovereigns, which YOU, not your government, are]. For there is no authority except from God,*  
37 *and the authorities that exist are appointed by God"* (Rom. 13:1). "We the people" are the *only* sovereigns in this  
38 country and this fact has been recognized by the supreme Court since the foundation of this country. This  
39 commandment applies even to atheistic human governments unless, of course, the law is anti-scriptural. In that  
40 situation the believer must obey God rather than humans (Acts 4:18-20). In fact, when Paul wrote those words in Rom.  
41 13:1, the evil Emperor Nero was on the throne. See also Titus 3:1.
- 42 3. We are to pay our *legitimate* (authorized by the man's *POSITIVE law* and consistent with God's law, not a bureaucrat)  
43 taxes to human government (see Matt. 17:24-27;22:21; Rom. 13:7). Man's law here in America does not currently  
44 authorize a direct mandatory/non-voluntary tax on wages of real people, but *only* on corporations. The statutory  
45 "taxpayer" is in fact a voluntary public officer of a federal corporation called "United States". The Internal Revenue

<sup>6</sup> *No Enforcement Statutes/IRS Regulations Applicable for Individual Income Tax!*, Update #1, Eddie Kahn, page 5.

Code is also not “positive law” and therefore imposes no obligation upon anyone except those who voluntarily consent to be subject to its provisions. Chapter 5 exhaustively analyzes the law to prove to you from just about every possible angle that this is indeed the case.

4. We are to pray for the leaders in human government.

*“Therefore I exhort first of all that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men, for kings and all who are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and reverence. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior”*  
[1 Tim. 2:1-3]

### 1.10.5 You Can’t Trust Lawyers or Most Politicians

In Jesus’ time, the lawyers were called the Pharisees. Throughout the New Testament, Jesus condemns lawyers. He also warned us to beware of their doctrine, which was their teachings:

*Then Jesus said to them, “**Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.**” ....How is it you do not understand that I did no speak to you concerning bread?—but to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.” Then **they understood that He did not tell them to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees.***  
[Matt. 16:6,11,12; Bible, NKJV]

Several times, Jesus warned us that the lawyers are vain and wicked hypocrites and man-pleasers who are going to HELL, and that friendship with the world was enmity with God:

*“For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven.”*  
[Matt. 5:20, Bible, NKJV]  
[INTERPRETATION: The Pharisees are going to HELL!]

*“Now you Pharisees make the outside of the cup and dish clean, but your inward part is full of greed and wickedness.”*  
[Luke 11:39, Bible, NKJV]

*“But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the will of God for themselves, not having been baptized by him.”* [Luke 7:30, Bible, NKJV]

*“But woe to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows’ houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore you will receive greater condemnation.*

*Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves.”*

*“Woe to you, blind guides, who say, ‘Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.’ Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that sanctifies the gold?”*  
[Matt. 23:13-17, Bible, NKJV]

*“Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell?”*  
[Matt. 23:33, Bible, NKJV]

Since most politicians now are also lawyers, then by implication we should also beware of politicians and legislators. The people who write the IRS publications are lawyers because these publications must be written, at least in theory, to accurately portray what our tax code says. As you will find out later in section 3.16, these publications and forms, in fact, are willfully fraudulent, because if they told the truth accurately, most Americans would refuse to pay an income tax that they in fact do not owe. These publications are designed as the only teaching tool most Americans will ever read about their obligation to pay income taxes, and Jesus warned us about the teachings and doctrine of the Pharisees/lawyers. The courts (whose judges are also lawyers beholden to their law school buddies in the executive branch) have ruled repeatedly that the IRS cannot and should not be held responsible for the content of its publications, even if they are a downright fraud!

**1.10.6 How can I wake up fellow Christians to the truths in this book?**

Below is a very common type of correspondence we get, which we would like to respond to in advance for all the people who no doubt will feel like asking it:

*I am \_\_\_\_\_(Christian, Evangelical, Lutheran, Episcopal, Catholic, LDS, etc) and would like to open the minds of fellow members of my church. However, I have found that they don't want me to bring it up in church meetings. I am feeling very alienated as a result of knowing the truth and then being unable to express my knowledge to other Christians who need to understand the constructive fraud that we are living under. Are you \_\_\_\_\_(Christian, LDS, etc) and how are you handling this in your church? If you are not then if you have any advice other than my referring people to your website please advise...thank you!*

**Our response follows:**

It is very difficult to express this kind of thing to people in any church, because Christians are taught to be good sheep and pastors are taught to be good shepherds and never question government authority. That is why pastors get a 501(c)(3) status and become government corporations and franchises to begin with! That passive mindset and avoidance of all risk has to be defeated before you will encounter fertile ground for further teaching and learning on the subjects found in this book. As you approach such passivity, remind people of the following:

*"One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."  
[Proverbs 28:9, Bible]*

We have written another free Acrobat book found on our website below that might help:

**Family Constitution**

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>

The areas in the above book which you might want to read both yourself and to your church brethren are:

1. Section 3.7: Techniques for Correction and Encouragement
2. Chapter 7: Relationship to Governments and the World.

We have found that the main dogma that gets in the way of teaching people the truths in this book is the false notion that we shouldn't judge as Christians. Psalm 15:1-5 provides an additional scriptural basis for judging evil:

*"Lord, who may abide in Your tabernacle? Who may dwell in Your holy hill?*

*He who walks uprightly, and works righteousness, and speaks the truth in his heart;*

*He who does not backbite with his tongue, nor does evil to his neighbor, nor does he take up a reproach against his friend;*

***In whose eyes a vile person is despised, but he honors those who fear the Lord: He who swears to his own hurt and does not change;***

*He who does not put out his money at usury, nor does he take a bribe against the innocent.*

*He who does these things shall never be moved."*

*[Psalm 15:1-5, Bible, NKJV]*

Notice that despising and opposing a vile person, or organization like the IRS, would appear to be one of our obligations as Christians based on the above. You also might want to read to your colleagues the entire book of Esther, which is relatively short. It tells the story of how a corrupt and extortionary government official named Haman was *despised* (like the above scripture requires) by an honorable man named Mordecai, and how divine justice was ultimately served upon Haman, which resulted in his execution as well as the execution of all his sons. Many parallels can be found in this book of the Bible with the average believer and our current government's tax policies as follows:

**Table 1-1: Parallels between Bible Book of Esther and Our Present Situation**



<i>Character or situation from Bible Book of Esther</i>	<i>Scripture reference</i>	<i>Book section/reference</i>	<i>Today's parallel</i>
Esther	Esther 2:7	Sections 6.5.6	Bob Schulz/We The People ( <a href="http://www.givemeliberty.org/">http://www.givemeliberty.org/</a> )
Mordecai	Esther 2:5-7	Section 1.4	This author, Family Guardian Fellowship, and his words found in this book.
Haman	Esther 3:1	Chapter 7	The Internal Revenue Service (IRS) and Dept. of Treasury
Jews	Esther 3:8-9	Section 4.12.11	Informed patriots such as yourself who know the truth about the IRS and who are blowing the whistle on the IRS fraud..
King Ahasuerus	Esther 1:1-2	Section 6.5	The U.S. Congress
Haman's plot to plunder and persecute the Jews	Esther 3:10-15	Chapter 6	The IRS' lawless behavior, gross misapplication of the tax code, and blatant violation of rights of the average American.
Mordecai reveals to the king a plot to assassinate the king	Esther 2:21-23	This book	This book exposes factors that will contribute to the discrediting and eventual dissolution of our federal government because of unlawful and treasonous behavior by our public officials.
Mordecai refuses to bow and pay homage to Haman	Esther 3:2-6; Psalm 15:4	Introduction to Chapter 1 of this book, which talks about hate	My refusal to pay an illegal and unlawful income tax. My refusal to fear or obey the unlawful requests of the IRS.
Haman's plot to kill Mordecai	Esther 5:9-14	Preface of this book. My case history at <a href="http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/CaseStudies/ChrisH/ChrisH.htm">http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/CaseStudies/ChrisH/ChrisH.htm</a>	IRS legal and administrative harassment of me in exercising my constitutional right to not pay income taxes. Mail fraud and extortion and virus attacks on my website aimed at undermining my First Amendment rights.
Deception of King by Haman	Esther 3:7-9	Section 6.5.6.	IRS lies to Congressmen at tax hearings.
Haman's payment to the King's treasuries as authority to destroy Jews	Esther 4:7	Section 6.5 Section 6.5.3	1. Bribery of Congress with extorted tax dollars by the IRS. 2. Bribery of federal courts under the Anti-Injunction Act full payment rule.
Esther's exposing of Haman's persecution of the Jews	Esther 4:4 to Esther 5:8	Family Guardian website and this book	The exposing of IRS fraud on our website and in this book.

<i>Character or situation from Bible Book of Esther</i>	<i>Scripture reference</i>	<i>Book section/reference</i>	<i>Today's parallel</i>
Execution of Haman by the King	Esther 7:1-10	None	Eventual destruction and dismemberment of the IRS by Congress in response to massive political repercussions of the truths in this book and at the We the People Website to the public at large.
Mordecai's decree to Jews to defend themselves against Haman's unrighteous decree that would annihilate them	Esther 8:7-11	Chapter 3 of the <u><i>Tax Fraud Prevention Manual</i></u> , Form #06.008	The defensive solutions we offer in Chapter 3 of the <u><i>Tax Fraud Prevention Manual</i></u> , Form #06.008 against unlawful actions of ignorant and greedy IRS agents.
Opposition of the Jews to plundering authorized by Haman	Esther	None	Your own fight against the IRS and its unlawful efforts to enforce a voluntary income tax.

1 The thing that really stands out about the above story is the example set by the Jews in rejecting the laws of the king and  
2 instead being governed by God's laws. For instance, in Esther 3:2-6, Mordecai, a Jew, refused to bow to an evil ruler named  
3 Haman. Then later in the book, Haman revealed disdain for all the Jews because they refused to be governed by anything  
4 but God's laws rather than the king's unjust laws:

5 *Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus, "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in all*  
6 *the provinces of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people's, **and they do not keep the king's***  
7 ***laws.** Therefore it is not fitting for the king to let them remain. If it pleases the king, let a decree be written that*  
8 *they be destroyed, and I will pay ten thousand talents of silver into the hands of those who do the work, to bring*  
9 *it into the king's treasuries."*  
10 *[Esther 3:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

11 Another powerful technique to motivate your fellow Christian brothers and sisters into action is to slip them a copy of Chapter  
12 2 of *The Great IRS Hoax* book. That will get them mad enough at their government to make them ready to learn and ready  
13 to change their passive attitude. That's why I put it close to the beginning of the book.

14 Good luck to those of you who are faced with this situation, because you have a tough road ahead of you overcoming the  
15 passivity and ignorance of your fellow Christian brothers, not to mention all the people working at the IRS who don't have a  
16 clue about what the law really says. The situation of church censorship by the IRS described in section 6.6.4 also compounds  
17 the difficulty you face. My prayers are with you. Please proceed with love, encouragement, and lots of patience. You can't  
18 undo the deliberate failings of 20 years of government/public schooling overnight.

## 19 **1.11 Common Objections to the Recommendations In This Document With Rebuttal**

20 Below are a few common objections we hear when we confront people with the truths found in this document. We'd like to  
21 answer all of these objections before we launch into our detailed study and analysis, so that we will be able to hold the interest  
22 and attention of our readers throughout this book by acknowledging their valid anxieties and concerns. We recognize that is  
23 a difficult thing to do for such a long book, which is why we carefully organized it so that it was useful also as a reference on  
24 selected tax subjects.

### 25 **1.11.1 Why can't you just pay your taxes like everyone else?**

1 These, and many other similar questions, are entirely irrelevant to the information in this document. However, because they  
 2 come up so frequently, they will be briefly addressed here. Keep in mind, both the questions on this page *and* my responses  
 3 to them have no bearing at all on what the law actually requires.

#### 4 **1.11.2 What do you mean my question is irrelevant?**

5 Congress did not impose a tax on my income. I cannot, therefore, pay "my" income taxes, even if I wanted to, because they  
 6 aren't "my" taxes. Why can't *you* just pay your whiskey-distilling taxes? Because you don't distill whiskey? Well, why  
 7 should that stop you?

8 A "tax" is a payment required by law. Most Americans who file tax returns are paying for a "scam," not a "tax." I suppose if  
 9 people want to feel noble and patriotic about being illegally defrauded of their money every year, that's their choice. But to  
 10 condemn someone for *not* being duped and extorted is just a bit twisted.

#### 11 **1.11.3 How Come my Accountant or Tax Attorney Doesn't Know This?**

12 *He is truly a Fool who trusts his:*

- 13 1. *Soul to a Preacher !*
- 14 2. *Health to a Doctor !*
- 15 3. *Rights to a Lawyer !*
- 16 4. *Freedom to a Politician !*
- 17 5. *Money to a Banker !*

18 Can most of the "experts" be wrong? Actually, they can. Unfortunately, like everyone else, "experts" are susceptible to some  
 19 imperfect aspects of human nature. Throughout history, the so-called "experts" in medicine, science, etc. have generally  
 20 ignored whatever evidence contradicted their preconceived notions. The same is true of modern-day tax "experts." When  
 21 given a piece of evidence that would shatter their career (and probably their world view), it is much easier for them to just  
 22 dismiss the evidence. For those tax professionals who dare to challenge their preconceived notions, or for those who would  
 23 like to challenge the expertise of their favorite tax "expert," we suggest:

12 [Test for Tax Professionals, Form #03.028](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm)  
 13 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

24 For those tax professionals who will actually address the issue using the statutes and regulations themselves, we welcome  
 25 their comments, thoughts and arguments.

26 The American Bar Association (ABA) is the one that benefits the most financially from the illegal income tax. The more  
 27 assets that the ABA can put at risk under the jurisdiction of the courts and the more complex the tax code is, the more litigation  
 28 there will be and the more lawyers we will need. The law of supply and demand will raise the wages of tax attorneys, and  
 29 the more money that is at risk, the more the greedy lawyers can charge! Therefore, tax lawyers promote untruth about the  
 30 voluntary nature of federal income tax because they benefit significantly and personally by the complexity, uncertainty, and  
 31 litigation that results from the income taxes being falsely thought of as mandatory.

32 These same lawyers are the ones who act as legal counsel for radio and television stations and newspapers and who interface  
 33 most frequently with politicians and regulators. And most of the people in the congress and the government who are part of  
 34 the legislative and judicial branches are also lawyers. The same tax attorneys who write the laws are the ones who get paid  
 35 big bucks by private firms to enforce and comply with these laws. The fox is in charge of the chickens, I'm afraid. Naturally,  
 36 lawyers will always promote the approach to the laws that will benefit them and their profession most, even if it hurts the  
 37 consumer's interest. And if they can use legalese to keep consumers ignorant about their ruse, as they seem to have done  
 38 with the federal income tax, then we won't even know about the conspiracy they have pulled on us. Shame on us for letting  
 39 it continue! Our own ignorance and laziness is to blame!

40 If you doubt the American Bar Association's (ABA's, which is the main national organization of lawyers throughout the  
 41 country) intentions, read the article below, where the ABA is volunteering with the IRS to push misinformation among young  
 42 people in our schools about the tax code. Do you think they are going to tell the young people that the income taxes violate  
 43 their constitutional rights or that they are voluntary if they are pushing CD-ROMS to get kids educated about how to comply  
 44 with the tax code, full-well knowing that they don't even need to pay? Do you think they are providing the IRS publications

1 to the kids that fool them into thinking they owe tax while NOT providing the U.S. Codes and C.F.R.'s which clearly show  
2 that they do NOT owe tax? Do you think they would give children a copy of this document?:

3 =====  
4 TAX NEWS - IRS TAX PRACTITIONER NEWSLETTER  
5 July 5, 2000 Volume 2000, Number 12  
6 =====  
7 Inside this Issue:  
8 --- Top Errors from Paid Preparers  
9 --- IRS Speakers Available to Address Your Group  
10 --- Retirement Plans for Small Businesses  
11 --- IRS Announces New Large and Mid-Size Business (LMSB) to  
12 Service Communications, Technology and Media Sectors  
13 --- Form 5500 Series to be Processes by the Department of Labor  
14 --- IRS Announces Quarterly Interest Rates  
15 --- IRS, ABA Join Forces to Distribute Tax Education CD-ROMS to 78,000 Schools  
16 ===== \*\*\* IRS, ABA Join  
17 Forces to Distribute Tax Education CD-ROMS to 78,000 Schools

18  
19 At the start of the summer job season, the Internal Revenue Service and the American Bar Association (ABA)  
20 unveiled a nationwide effort Friday to help educate teenagers entering the work force about the federal tax system.  
21 The IRS, in partnership with the Section of Taxation of the ABA, will distribute 78,000 CD-ROMs to high schools  
22 around the nation and U.S. embassy schools around the world. The CD-ROM provides a user-friendly approach  
23 to the workings of the tax system and offers tax tips for young workers. The CD-ROM offers a variety of features  
24 aimed at teenagers: a description of the federal tax system; tips for first-time wage earners; a dictionary of tax  
25 terms; > >- an illustrated discussion of how tax dollars are spent; and a "toolkit" to help teachers integrate tax  
26 topics into their lesson plans.

27 =====  
28 Tax News is published by the Public Affairs Office, Southern California District. Please send ideas or comments  
29 to IRS, Public Affairs Office, Attn: Tax News Editor, P.O. Box 30210, Laguna Niguel, CA 92607-0210, or e-mail  
30 them to social@irs.gov. To receive a FREE subscription to Tax News, visit our web site at  
31 www.irs.gov/pro/bus\_info/tax\_pro/where\_list/index.html. You can also subscribe by sending an e-mail to  
32 subscriptions@irs.gov with the words "subscribe wr-social" in the message. Do not include the quote marks in  
33 the message.

34 You must remember that attorneys and accountants are part of "the system." Do you think that if either your lawyer or your  
35 accountant knew or found out a way to make their services entirely irrelevant, they would tell you? Do you think that even  
36 if you pointed the truth out to them that their services were no longer needed and offered them proof, do you think they would  
37 want to hear it? They have Mercedes payments and spousal support payments to make, and it would be foolish to commit  
38 "professional suicide"! The more of your assets that are at risk of litigation, the more business lawyers and accountants get.  
39 The two biggest and best ways to put your assets at risk is either to get married or to owe taxes. Incidentally, both of these  
40 risk situations are a matter of law and involve lawyers. First, let's look at marriage.

#### 41 ATTORNEYS:

42 A high class Madam opened the brothel door to see a frail, bookish looking, older gentleman.

43 "Can I help you?" the madam asked.

44 "I want Natalie," the old man replied.

45 "Sir, Natalie is one of our most expensive ladies, perhaps someone else..."

46 "No, I must see Natalie."

47 Just then Natalie appeared and announced to the old man that she charges \$1,000 per visit. Without blinking, the  
48 man reached into his pocket and handed her ten \$100 bills. The two went up to a room for an hour, whereupon  
49 the man calmly left.

50 The next night he appeared again demanding to see Natalie. Natalie explained that no one had ever come back  
51 two nights in a row and that there were no discounts...it was still \$1,000 a visit.

52 Again the old man took out the money, the two went up to the room and an hour later, he left.

53 When he showed up the third consecutive night, no one could believe it. Again he handed Natalie the money and  
54 up to the room they went.

1 At the end of the hour Natalie questioned the old man: "No one has ever used my services three nights in a row.  
2 Where are you from?"

3 The old man replied, "I'm from Philadelphia."

4 "Really?" replied Natalie. "I have family who lives there."

5 "Yes, I know," said the old man. "Your father died, and I'm your sister's attorney. She asked me to give this \$3,000  
6 to you."

7 Moral of the story: Some things in life are certain: taxes, death and being screwed by an attorney.

8 George Washington was married *without* a marriage license. Abraham Lincoln was married *without* a marriage license. So,  
9 how did we come to this place in America where marriage licenses are issued?

10 Historically, all the states in America had laws outlawing the marriage of blacks and whites. In the mid-1800's, certain states  
11 began allowing interracial marriages or miscegenation as long as those marrying received a license from the state. In other  
12 words they had to receive *permission to do an act which without such permission would have been illegal*.

13 Black's Law Dictionary points to this historical fact when it defines "marriage license" as:

14 "A license or permission granted by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry."

15 "Intermarry" is defined in Black's Law Dictionary as:

16 "Miscegenation; mixed or interracial marriages."

17 Give the State and the lawyer politicians an inch and they will take a 100 miles (or as one elderly woman once said to me  
18 "10,000 miles"). Not long after these licenses were issued, some states began requiring *all* people who marry to obtain a  
19 marriage license. In 1923, the Federal Government established the Uniform Marriage and Marriage License Act (they later  
20 established the Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act). By 1929, every state in the Union had adopted marriage license laws.

21 It's quite clear that the reason for mandating marriage licenses was to: 1. Increase profits for family lawyers by increasing  
22 litigation as a result of divorce; 2. Increase the control of the state and the lawyers over your marriage, your assets, and your  
23 life. Have you ever considered that attorneys are admitted to practice by the politicians, and the laws the politicians write,  
24 after they pass the bar? Have you also considered that lawyers are simply government-recognized officers of the court, and  
25 that the court is part of the government, and that in most cases, judges are political appointees rather than elected officials?  
26 If the government wants control over your life and wants you to surrender your liberties, don't you think they'd want the  
27 lawyers to keep quiet about it and censure them for revealing where that power comes from? Couldn't that censure start by  
28 terrorizing them by threatening to take away their license to practice law if they reveal the truth or fight some new tax? If  
29 you want an example of how they terrorize lawyers who reveal the truth about the tax code, we recommend that you refer to  
30 item 232 in section 6.8 (the section entitled "Department of Justice Scandals Related to Income Taxes"). We have quotes  
31 there from the transcript of an actual Willful Failure to File trial where the judge threatened an attorney for wanting to discuss  
32 or reveal the contents of the tax code!

33 Isn't government power (and the leverage lawyers have) really about stealing your money or putting it at risk (with taxes and  
34 high legal bills) and terrorizing and intimidating and manipulating you with your own ignorance? Doesn't that ignorance  
35 come from a public education system that the *government* is responsible for and wants to keep you enslaved to (by  
36 undermining and opposing school vouchers)? Aren't most politicians also lawyers? Over half of the members of both the  
37 Senate and the House of Representatives of the U.S. Congress are lawyers. Do you still trust lawyers?

38 *Caveat emptor!*

39 Even worst yet, the President of the United States in the past has relied on referrals from the American Bar Association in the  
40 selection of Supreme Court and Federal District Court Judges. The goal of the American Bar Association is to maximize  
41 litigation and profits for lawyers, NOT to ensure truth is heard or justice is served! Do you still trust judges, most of whom  
42 started out as lawyers? If you do then you ought to read section 6.9, which talks about "Judicial Conspiracy to Protect the  
43 Income Tax: The Changing Definition of "Direct, Indirect, and Excise Taxes". That section will really wake you up.

**ACCOUNTANTS AND TAX PREPARERS:**

What about accountants? Most people need accountants so they can figure out business performance accurately so they know how much tax they owe. That way they can avoid government penalties and litigation regarding income taxes, right? If we didn't owe taxes on income, then we wouldn't have to figure out income, or at least we wouldn't need accountants to figure it out accurately, because we couldn't be penalized for making a mistake by the IRS or the Franchise Tax Board of our state. Once again, asking an accountant or tax preparer if you don't need to pay taxes is like asking a barber if you don't need a haircut. Do you think they will commit professional suicide and say you don't need their services? Do you still trust accountants?

**1.11.4 Why Doesn't the Media Blow the Whistle on This?**

*"Truth and news are not the same thing."  
[Katharine Graham, owner of The Washington Post]*

*"When you control opinion, as corporate America controls opinion in the United States, by owning the media, you can make the [many] believe almost anything you want, and you can guide them."  
[The Golden Age, Gore Vidal]*

***"Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage—with great patience and careful instruction. For the time will come when men [in the legal profession or the judiciary] will not put up with sound [legal] doctrine [such as that found in this book]. Instead, to suit their own desires, they [our covetous public dis-servants] will gather around them a great number of teachers [court-appointed "experts", "licensed" government whores called attorneys and CPA's, and educators in government-run or subsidized public schools and liberal universities] to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to [government and legal-profession] myths. But you [the chosen of God and His servants must], keep your head in all situations, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry."**  
[2 Tim. 4:2-5, Bible, NKJV]*

In 1953, John Swinton, the former Chief of Staff for the New York Times, was asked to give a toast to the independent press before the New York Club. It is obvious that he believed that the concept of an "independent press" was a farce that he no longer wished to be party to. Following is a quote from that monumentally revealing toast. Some of our members have provided evidence about the credibility of this quote, so take it with a grain of salt:

*"There is no such thing, at this date of the world's history, in America, as an independent press. You know it and I know it. There is not one of you who dares to write your honest opinions, and if you did, you know beforehand that it would never appear in print. I am paid weekly for keeping my honest opinion out of the paper. Others of you are paid similar salaries for similar things, and any of you who would be so foolish as to write honest opinions would be out on the streets looking for another job. If I allowed my honest opinions to appear in one issue of the paper, before twenty-four hours my occupation would be gone.*

*The business of journalists is to destroy the truth; to lie outright; to pervert; to vilify; to fawn at the feet of mammon, and to sell his country and his race for his daily bread. You know it and I know it.*

*What folly is this, toasting to an independent press? We are the tools and vassal of rich men behind the scenes. We are the jumping jacks; they pull the strings and we dance. Our talents, our possibilities and our lives are all the property of other men. We are intellectual prostitutes."*

*[John Swinton, Former Chief of Staff for the New York Times, 1953]*

Why doesn't the media blow the whistle on this scam? Because the liberal media has no interest in reporting the truth on the voluntary nature of the income tax, and on most other issues, for that matter. The media is infiltrated with liberals who are promoting the following agendas: expansion of governmental powers, abortion rights, homosexuality, legalization of drugs and prostitution, no restrictions on pornography on the Internet, getting prayer and morality out of the schools so Satan can take over, and ever-expanding federal sponsorship of the liberal agenda and lifestyle. Taxes and government advocacy are needed to promote their agendas that are financed by the federal government, so the media and liberals naturally won't speak out against the socialist nature of income taxes. Also, since the media are regulated by the government and influenced by the politicians who pass the laws to regulate them, they naturally will pander to the desires of corrupt or amoral politicians in government over and above those of their reading or listening audience. The number one cause or source of that corruption is the love of money unbridled by scruples or moral constraints.

### 1.11.5 Why Won't the IRS and the U.S. Congress Tell Us The Truth?

If you had someone fooled into thinking that they need to send 30% of their income to you every month with no obligation on your part to do anything for that money, would you volunteer the truth to them by telling them they don't need to? If they asked you the truth, would you respond with the complete and whole truth? "Why look a gift horse in the mouth?" really applies here. Besides, look at all the chaos that people in government will try to convince you would happen if the IRS and the U.S. Congress came clean:

1. The U.S. Congress would be on its knees begging the states for money as the founding fathers intended. This would be in stark contrast to what they do now, which is twisting the arms of the states with grants of YOUR tax dollars to further invade your rights. Exhibit A is the recent mandate from Congress that states won't receive welfare grants unless they force everyone with a driver's license to give out their Social Security Number.
2. Several Internal Revenue Service officers would be prosecuted under the claims and laws listed in sections 5.6. These would result in the agents being terminated for extortion, fraud, and racketeering. However, if they say nothing in response to a Citizen's queries, they can't be prosecuted as part of this extortion "conspiracy" and can claim ignorance or "plausible deniability", which by the way we can't legally use as an excuse to protect us from our ignorance of the tax code.
3. There would be an avalanche of people and businesses leaving the system, and federal government revenues would dry up quickly. They wouldn't be able to convince anyone to pay taxes if they found out it was just, in effect, a voluntary "donation" to the federal government!
4. Millions of citizens who had income from only the 50 Union states would apply for a retroactive refund of their past taxes overpaid. They could apply as far back as the statute of limitations would allow, thus increasing the financial liability of the government at the time that it has no income tax revenues.
5. The federal government would not be able to pay the interest on the national debt, so it would have to beg the states for a loan. If they didn't get the loan, they might have to default and their credit rating would be destroyed.
6. Creditors of the U.S. Government would call their loans once their loan payments stopped, and the government might have to default at that point.
7. The states would stop getting their federal grants, because the Fed would run out of money.
8. A large part of the federal workforce would have to be let go, because the government couldn't afford to pay them. That means the very IRS employees who are oppressing us now would have to be let go, and that would close the door to any more coercion to pay "voluntary" taxes on the part of the IRS.
9. A lot more discipline would be required by the few remaining federal legislators to manage a very tight budget. The deficit spending would have to stop immediately and they would finally HAVE to balance the budget because their credit would be so bad that they couldn't borrow any more money! YEAH!
10. Federal employees would take a pay cut and cost of living increases would have to be eliminated.
11. Social security retirees would see their benefits reduced or eliminated entirely.
12. The military would need to be scaled back to a level the Fed could afford.
13. There would be chaos and civil unrest because economic circumstances would be changed considerably.

With change and chaos on this grand a scale caused by a massive reduction in federal revenues, there are some very good reasons NOT to tell the truth!

**The stability of our whole country and most of the economic and political power of Congress rests on not telling the truth and concealing the truth!**

The above is the kind of propaganda you are likely to hear from judges and the IRS in a tax trial. However, this is NOT the whole story or even the most important part of the story. As you will learn subsequently in section 1.12, the federal government's revenues would only go down 41% if Subtitle A (personal) income tax were ended, and the states could pick up the bill for the difference under the apportionment provisions in the federal constitution. No big deal. It turns out that the judges and the IRS who will use the above Fear, Uncertainty, and Doubt (FUD) propaganda have never taken the time to determine as we have in section 1.12 that the core functions of our federal government, including the military, courts, and jails, can function quite adequately and in the black without income taxes. As a matter of fact, if our spendaholic federal government hadn't tried to spend us into a hole by chronically going into debt, we would have a massive surplus! The problem is not income for our federal government. The problem is the inability of our Congress to control its spending. *The*

1 problem is not Americans wanting to pay their fair share...the problem is a federal government that wants more than its fair  
 2 share! Do you think we would have a more accountable and frugal and wise federal government if it had to beg the states  
 3 for money?...absolutely! Do you think federal judges, prosecutors, and IRS agents want to be more accountable to the public  
 4 they serve? NO!! That's why they will tell you these kinds of lies..... so they can coast along on their extorted and fat  
 5 government paycheck arrogantly impervious to the will of the people they serve as "public servants".

6 At this point, some of you might be saying:

7 *"If it would hurt our society that badly to tell the truth to people that income taxes are completely voluntary, then*  
 8 *why don't we make it a legal obligation to pay taxes by modifying the constitution?"*

9 Our answer to that is that most of the pain caused by losing income tax revenues would come because of the chronic federal  
 10 deficit spending we have seen and the very large national debt that has accumulated over the years because of it. The majority  
 11 of this debt comes from entitlement programs like Social Security and Welfare. Most of the hurt would happen because not  
 12 paying interest on the national debt to the Federal Reserve would damage our credit rating so badly that we would have to  
 13 stop borrowing to pay general revenues every year as we have for decades. This deficit spending funded by borrowing from  
 14 the Federal Reserve is like a heroin fix our government has become addicted to and can no longer function without. Once  
 15 they have to go off the drug, then the pain will be severe, but in the long run, it would be good for the country. Thomas  
 16 Jefferson, our founding father who wrote the Declaration of Independence even said so:

17 *"The maxim of buying nothing without the money in our pockets to pay for it would make of our country one of*  
 18 *the happiest on earth."*

19 *[Thomas Jefferson to Alexander Donald, 1787. ME 6:192 ]*

20 *"I own it to be my opinion, that good will arise from the destruction of our credit. I see nothing else which can*  
 21 *restrain our disposition to luxury, and to the change of those manners which alone can preserve republican*  
 22 *government. As it is impossible to prevent credit, the best way would be to cure its ill effects by giving an*  
 23 *instantaneous recovery to the creditor. This would be reducing purchases on credit to purchases for ready money.*  
 24 *A man would then see a prison painted on everything he wished, but had not ready money to pay for."*

25 *[Thomas Jefferson to Archibald Stuart, 1786. ME 5:259 ]*

26 If we changed the law by adding a liability statute to mandate paying federal income taxes, then no matter how much money  
 27 we give the U.S. Congress and the President, it will never be enough because they will always figure out a way to spend more  
 28 than we give them. As we said in section 2.8.11 on Debt, having this specter of perpetual national debt over our head is a  
 29 political and rhetorical vehicle that our representatives will use to convince us that we should continue "volunteering" to be  
 30 slaves to the government by paying our income taxes and thereby pay off that national debt. The bondage will be perpetual.  
 31 The only way we should therefore accept mandated federal income taxes is if all of the following criteria are met:

- 32 1. There are no government entitlement programs like Welfare, Social Security, or Medicare. Churches and families take  
 33 responsibility for caring for the sick, the homeless, and the elderly.
- 34 2. There is a national balanced budget amendment added to the U.S. Constitution forcing congress to never borrow to meet  
 35 its obligations during any year.
- 36 3. A 3/4 majority in both houses of Congress is required plus a national referendum by voters to raise taxes or add new  
 37 taxes, but only a simple majority and no vote by citizens to lower them.
- 38 4. Taxes cannot increase by more than the rate of inflation and population growth.
- 39 5. National referendums are permitted allowing voters to approve a bill to lower their taxes over the objections of congress,  
 40 if they think taxes are too high.
- 41 6. Voting laws should be changed to disqualify any voter's vote from counting for any specific issue if they benefit  
 42 personally from that vote. For instance, if a person is voting in favor of social security benefit increase on a national  
 43 referendum, they cannot be retired and receiving those benefits. This will prevent mobocracy from causing the  
 44 referendum process to turn our government into a Robinhood mechanism to rob from the rich and give to the poor. The  
 45 ultimate end of not doing this will be socialism.

46 We would also like to point out that the fact that the Congress has mismanaged our country financially by chronic deficit  
 47 spending and lack of budget discipline, and that they have done it against the will of the people. The vast majority of  
 48 Americans for quite some time didn't approve of national deficit spending, and yet the Congress has continued to do it over  
 49 their objections. This has been the impetus behind the Balanced Budget Amendment, which was a grass roots effort that has  
 50 so far not passed, even though many states at the state level have similar amendments. There is no reason why we shouldn't  
 51 feel a little collective pain eventually by eliminating individual income taxes as the law requires. There is no reason we



1 shouldn't suffer for indifferently allowing our elected representatives to be so irresponsible about the best long-term financial  
 2 interests of this country as they borrowed us into a deep hole. Perhaps feeling some pain would help people focus on where  
 3 the problem is and getting it fixed! Feeling the pain as our country goes off the addictive "heroin drug" of deficit spending  
 4 might result in a balanced budget amendment and a permanent end to deficit spending because of the public outrage and  
 5 consternation that would result. It would be good for us all. Why shouldn't our federal government have to do the same thing  
 6 every other Citizen does in this country by balancing their budget in paying off their monthly bills and not going into debt to  
 7 pay those regular bills?

#### 8 **1.11.6 But how will government function if we don't pay?**

9 The Constitution, in articles 1:2:3 and 1:9:4, empowers Congress to tax states through apportionment. Each state is supposed  
 10 to pay their fair share based on population, and the tax must be a fixed assessment on a per capita basis. Apportioned direct  
 11 taxes always have been the ONLY types of direct taxes authorized under the U.S. Constitution. Congress has always had the  
 12 power to raise revenues by sending a bill to the states under this apportionment. As a matter of fact, the concept of  
 13 apportionment is behind why we do a census every ten years: to calculate the number of people living in each state so that  
 14 each state knows what their share of the national apportionment tax is supposed to be, and to determine the number of  
 15 representatives for each state in the House of Representatives. However, Congress has only exercised this authority to  
 16 institute direct apportioned taxes on the states once in the past. Before the income tax, the federal government obtained most  
 17 of its revenues from tariffs. Income taxes only became commonplace in the early 1900's after the passage of the 16<sup>th</sup>  
 18 Amendment.

19 A federal government which can fabricate currency out of thin air (a.k.a. "monetary policy") and tax imports and income of  
 20 businesses related to foreign commerce (tariffs) therefore doesn't need direct taxation of citizens to pay its bills. Of course,  
 21 if the government printed too much money, then the result would be run-away inflation, but the general outcome is the same.  
 22 Whether you lose 30% of your currency through taxation, or your currency loses 30% of its value through inflation, your  
 23 buying power is similarly affected (of course, there are other ramifications of the two approaches).

24 With these points made clear, the question of how the government will function without income taxes is irrelevant to the  
 25 point of this document. The question is basically a complaint against spreading the truth, and having the people stop paying  
 26 for this fraud. If someone doesn't like that option, what other alternatives are there? The only other alternative is to *choose*  
 27 to be ignorant, *choose* to be defrauded, and choose to *reward* those who have perpetrated the biggest scam and extortion  
 28 racket in history. Of course, those who ask the question won't come right out and *suggest* that, but that's precisely what the  
 29 question implies. *Congress did not impose a tax on my income, but instead created an elaborate scheme to defraud me of my*  
 30 *money*. If someone objects to my refusal to pay, they *must* advocate that I go along with, and *fund* this fraud. That's the only  
 31 other choice.

32 For all the talk of a national sales tax, a value-added tax, a flat income tax, etc., none of them are even constitutional, for the  
 33 same reason Congress couldn't impose the income tax most people *think* exists now. Congress had to commit massive fraud  
 34 to get where they are now. Some seem eager to forgive and/or ignore that fraud, ignore the Constitution, or do anything else  
 35 they can to preserve the massive centralized government that now exists.

36 *"Give me a massive government or give me death!"*

37 Is that what we're advocating here, because I certainly hope not? I don't intend to stop spreading the truth based on the  
 38 complaints of the liberal pro-fraud lobby. Sorry. If you can't handle living in a country that has a federal government strictly  
 39 limited by a constitution, there are many totalitarian countries around the world where you don't have to put up with that and  
 40 would feel quite at home. Ironically, we are a country of refugees who came to America to escape precisely that kind of  
 41 political climate, so why don't you go back to where you came from if you don't like it!

#### 42 **1.11.7 What kind of benefits could the government provide WITHOUT taxes?**

43 *"If we can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of taking care of*  
 44 *them, they must become happy."*  
 45 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

46 The statement below is an actual (funny) email from one of our readers, who clearly was rather perturbed by this book:

1            *You (the person behind this website) are such a bonehead! What kind benefits could the government provide*  
 2            *without taxes? I will admit that we may be over-taxed, but if nobody ever paid any taxes, we would not have a*  
 3            *government to SERVE US at all.*

4            *Why don't you try to find something more productive to do with your time.*

5            *Get real, Get a life.*

6            *Daniel Williams*

7 The comment above is based on the following false premises and assumptions:

- 8 1. We should get or are entitled to government “benefits”. We pointed out in the preface of this book that this attitude is  
 9 one of the biggest enemies of republican government. People like Daniel who demand such benefits are part of the  
 10 problem and not part of the solution:

11            *We have met the enemy, and he is us!*

12 These people, as we pointed out in the preface, want to compel their brother to be their caretakers, and that’s socialism  
 13 in action. It makes no difference that it was done by majority vote or democracy or in grandiose pursuit of the perceived  
 14 “public good”, it’s still un-American and socialistic and the antithesis of liberty and freedom.

- 15 2. Government benefits are indispensable. Such benefits are only indispensable for people who don’t have a life and are  
 16 so afraid they won’t be able to make it in the real world that they have been deceived into thinking that they need a big  
 17 government safety net to take care of them.
- 18 3. The government would receive no tax money without income taxes. Oh really? Our federal government survived quite  
 19 well on imposts, excises, and tariffs on foreign imports from 1776 all the way up to 1913 and never ran up significant  
 20 debt. If our government wasn’t so big and bloated and wasteful, it could continue to fund its programs entirely from  
 21 such taxes and without the aid of personal income taxes. And if it couldn’t, then apportionment is always a constitutional  
 22 option, but the congress would have to justify and defend their expenditures because the states would be footing the bill  
 23 and they would want to ensure that their tax dollars were efficiently and wisely spent. Why shouldn’t our federal  
 24 government be accountable directly to the state governments in such a way? Is it beneath the pride of most U.S.  
 25 Congressmen (the majority of which are anti-authoritarian lawyers) to grovel in their district or their state for their share  
 26 of apportioned funds?
- 27 4. The government effectively SERVES us with the money we pay it. We would argue that we could do a much better job  
 28 providing social security, Medicare, etc. within the family and church unit than the government could ever do, if the  
 29 government wouldn’t force everyone to participate in such ineffective programs that will soon be bankrupt.

30 The more government benefits we demand, the more taxes that must be forcibly collected from people to pay for those  
 31 benefits. The problem is not so much that people want government benefits. The problem is that:

- 32 1. People who want government benefits don’t have to reimburse the government eventually for ALL of the benefits  
 33 they draw in full, plus interest. If they don’t reimburse the government, then the government becomes a Robinhood  
 34 that essentially abuses its power to plunder the rich to subsidize the poor. Thomas Jefferson described this evil best  
 35 when he said:

36            *"It is incumbent on every generation to pay its own debts as it goes. A principle which if acted on would save one-*  
 37            *half the wars of the world."*

38            *[Thomas Jefferson to A. L. C. Destutt de Tracy, 1820. FE 10:175 ]*

39            *"Funding I consider as limited, rightfully, to a redemption of the debt within the lives of a majority of the*  
 40            *generation contracting it; every generation coming equally, by the laws of the Creator of the world, to the free*  
 41            *possession of the earth He made for their subsistence, unencumbered by their predecessors, who, like them, were*  
 42            *but tenants for life."*

43            *[Thomas Jefferson to John Taylor, 1816. ME 15:18 ]*

44 How come our income taxes aren’t proportional to the amount of federal debt accumulated during our lifetime, so  
 45 that the debt will statistically be paid off before we die? Who wants to pay off their parents debts after they die, and  
 46 wouldn’t that amount to peonage? We don’t want to hand our children a big mountain of debt as their inheritance,  
 47 do we? Wouldn’t that be thievery? Don’t most Americans want to hand their children a world that is better off than

1 the one they started with and isn't that the best way to express our love for our own children? It is according to  
2 Thomas Jefferson:

3 *"I sincerely believe... that banking establishments are more dangerous than standing armies, and that the*  
4 *principle of spending money to be paid by posterity under the name of funding is but swindling futurity on a large*  
5 *scale."*  
6 *[Thomas Jefferson to John Taylor, 1816. ME 15:23 ]*

- 7 2. People who DON'T want government benefits can be forced by the government to subsidize other people who do!  
8 If ultimate sovereignty resides with the people and the government derives its powers from the consent of the  
9 governed according to the Declaration of Independence, then why should the government be able to compel its  
10 citizens to subsidize inefficient, wasteful, and socialist pursuits that impair their liberties? Why should government  
11 be able to compel citizens to receive and pay for benefits they don't want? Is that freedom? It sounds like  
12 "involuntary servitude", which clearly violates the 13<sup>th</sup> Amendment to the Constitution.

13 People such as Daniel (and there are many socialists like him) ought to be compelled to pay 80% of their income to the  
14 government in taxes and get 1/3 of the money they paid back in benefits from their wasteful government. But the rest of us  
15 sane people who are convinced we can do a better job taking care of ourselves and our families than the inefficient government  
16 ever could ought to have the freedom and the liberty to do that without subsidizing such madness or being labeled as politically  
17 incorrect radicals. Isn't complete control over one's property (income and belongings and labor) and complete and personal  
18 responsibility for our own self the essence of freedom and liberty? George Washington said it best, when he warned about  
19 the chief danger of big government:

20 *"Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful*  
21 *master."*  
22 *[George Washington]*

23 Why can't the government operate more like a business and eliminate the need to use force or legal trickery to compel people?  
24 Why can't the government just send a bill to the people who want the benefits and pay only these people according to what  
25 they put in, without forcing them to continue participating when they want to stop receiving benefits? That's a fine capitalist  
26 business model. If capitalism works so well in the private sector, how come we can't use it in the public sector within the  
27 confines of our own government? Visit the Social Security Administration and tell them you want to stop contributing and  
28 would be perfectly happy to collect benefits only based on what you put in up to this time. They will laugh you out of the  
29 office! Is that freedom and respect for people's property rights, or is that tyranny and economic slavery disguised as  
30 government benevolence? Are we trying to prop up a giant Ponzi Robinhood scheme like Social Security to delay its  
31 inevitable collapse by forcing people who are younger to stay imprisoned in such an ineffective program?

32 Have you ever had the feeling that the income tax has become a political vehicle for class warfare, where the poor use the  
33 power of the government to plunder the rich and thereby obtain unearned benefits? This is exactly the evil that the U.S.  
34 Supreme Court warned us of way back in 1895, when the U.S. government attempted for the first time to institute direct taxes  
35 on individuals and declared them unconstitutional:

36 *"Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity that they go down to the very*  
37 *foundations of the government. If the provisions of the Constitution can be set aside by an act of Congress,*  
38 *where is the course of usurpation to end?*

39 *The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the stepping stone to others larger and*  
40 *more sweeping, until our political contest will become war of the poor against the rich; a war of growing*  
41 *intensity and bitterness."*  
42 *[Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429, 158 U.S. 601 (1895)]*

43 If you want to know more about this kind of class warfare facilitated by the abuse of government power, we recommend that  
44 you read The Law, by Frederic Bastiat, which we have on our website at:

45 <http://famguardian.org/Publications/TheLaw/TheLaw.htm>.

46 Finally, here was my response to that email:

47 Daniel,

I'm guessing that you are a beneficiary of the largess produced by income taxes illegally collected by the IRS. Why look a gift horse in the mouth? Why question your chief benefactor?

You completely missed the entire point of the book. In the words of the Supreme Court found in section 2.11 of the book:

"Our government is the potent, the omnipresent teacher. For good or for ill, it teaches the whole people by its example. Crime is contagious. If the government becomes a lawbreaker, it breeds contempt for the law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself; it invites anarchy. To declare that in the administration of the criminal law the end justifies the means...would bring terrible retribution. Against that pernicious doctrine this Court should resolutely set its face." Justice Brandeis, *Olmstead v. United States*, 277 U.S. 438, 485 (1928)

The government is breaking the law by imposing personal income taxes unlawfully. There is no reason why they shouldn't follow the law like the rest of us and only impose constitutional taxes, which currently only include imposts, duties, and excises imposed on foreign trade. If they did this, government would be much smaller and there would be more room for personal liberty.

"Government big enough to supply everything you need is big enough to take everything you have. The course of history shows that as a government grows, liberty decreases." Thomas Jefferson

If you like big government, why don't you find a socialist country to live in like England or France, where guns are illegal and citizens are economic slaves and wards of the state.

God Bless You,

Family Guardian Fellowship

### 1.11.8 I Believe You But I'm Too Afraid to Confront the IRS

By: Devvy Kidd

June 6, 1999

As news of the IRS Showdown at the National Press Club in July 2000 spread across America, now comes the "I'm too afraid" brigade. These are the people who have already contacted me with: "Everything you're saying Devvy is true. I've known it for years but I'm too afraid not to **voluntarily** file my income tax returns." "You're right Devvy. Millions of us know that we're being forced against our will, in an unlawful manner sanctioned by the U.S. Congress, to file tax returns *when there is no law* that compels us to do it. But, I'm too afraid. If I don't file, they will take my house and my bank accounts."

This is what I have to say to those of you who are "too afraid":

*Don't confuse fear with cowardice.*

Do you think that the men who stood their ground at Lexington & Concord, April 19, 1775 didn't experience fear? Of course they did. But, they didn't let their fear rule them and yes, they knew they would probably die, not just give up four walls and a few pieces of paper.

Do you think the 558,000+ men who served in Viet Nam weren't afraid in the jungles of Viet Nam or our fighting forces at Guadalcanal, in Italy, Guam, during WWI, Korea or any of the other unholy wars *the bankers have orchestrated*? Of course they were. But, they didn't let their fear rule them and yes, hundreds of thousands have died on the battlefields around this globe - to keep America free. To keep **you** free.

Do you think that Bill Benson, former Congressman George Hansen, John Voss, and tens and tens of thousands of other Americans who *broke no law*, had this corrupt government come after them, destroy their families and their lives and throw them in jail - *do you think they felt no fear*? Of course they did. But, being men of conviction, honor and integrity, they had to do what was right. As men who value truth and freedom above lies, deceit and corruption, they **knew** the price they would have to pay and they did.

Do you think that Patrick Henry wasn't afraid deep down inside the pit of his gut when he gave his "Give Me Liberty or Give Me Death" speech on March 23, 1775? It would have been easier for Henry and the others to just get on their knees and settle for the scraps from the table of King George III. But, they couldn't do that - **the fire in their belly which burned for freedom was stronger than their fear.**

1 Do you think that firemen and policemen don't feel that clawing, terrible, tangible fear moving up their belly when they are  
2 called upon to fight a fire or stop criminals or rescue someone? What would happen if they allowed that fear to turn to  
3 cowardice and simply walked away?

4 What if everyone who ever felt fear, simply took the easy way out? What if everyone who ever felt fear, just gave up and  
5 said, "I can live on my knees. At least I will be alive and comfortable." That reminds me of the movie, *The Magnificent Seven*.  
6 After Eli Wallach, the bad bandito, comes in and shoots up the village and kills one of the peons, the village men stand around  
7 looking at each other. One man sheepishly and in a cowardly fashion says, "It's not so bad. They do leave us a little to eat."

8 Is that what we've reduced our great society down to? So what if the government is raining tyranny against her people? As  
9 long as we are left a few crumbs, we should get on our knees and accept it - we the people of the once great and mighty  
10 United States of America? This is cowardice.

11 *What is it you are protecting? **The continued destruction of our natural born rights?*** Our guns are the last thing between  
12 us and them and anyone who doubts that lives in a state of blind stupidity. We know that all these gun laws are  
13 unconstitutional, yet it will continue until the shadow government finally reaches the point where they have orchestrated a  
14 situation in this country where full confiscation will take place. Without our guns, we will be toast. Deep in your heart, you  
15 know this.

16 Their ability to buy politicians and special interest groups comes from money. Their ability to enslave us, keep us working  
17 two and three jobs just to make ends meet, **their ability to instill fear** in US through all these draconian federal junk laws -  
18 it all comes from money. The continuation of this assault on our freedom will mushroom unchecked **because it is being**  
19 **protected by your fear.**

20 How about this continued hoax called "fair and equal elections?" The continued dumbing down of our children in the  
21 government's cesspool system called schools? The continued destruction of our national security and espionage at the highest  
22 levels of this government - in exchange for what? Higher returns on mutual funds? The continued killing of Americans by  
23 this government, i.e. Ruby Ridge, Waco, OKC - with no one held accountable **because it is being protected by your fear.**

24 How do you feel about this war in Kosovo? Where do you think the money for this comes from? That's right. Since there isn't  
25 any, Congress will just continue borrowing from this unconstitutional private banking/accounting firm called the "FED," and  
26 **you** will continue groping on your knees to keep paying the IRS to pay them. **Is this what you're protecting with your**  
27 **fear?**

28 How do you feel about the billions being thrown to the IMF, then outright given to the Ruskie and select individuals over  
29 there in Moscow who have stolen **billions** and put it into Swiss bank accounts? We **know** this to be true from the outstanding,  
30 intense and thorough research done by dedicated journalists. **Is this what you want to keep protecting with your fear?** It  
31 will **not** stop until this unholy alliance, the IRS/FED swindle is shut down.

32 How do you feel about multi-millions upon millions of dollars thrown into that unconstitutional sewer called the National  
33 Endowment for the Arts? How about the **billions and billions** being given to the non-productive in this country? To **non-**  
34 **citizens** who have **no constitutional right to anything** - how about those **billions**? How about all the money being thrown  
35 at 20,000 refugees made homeless by this adulterous liar in the White House? There isn't a scintilla of constitutional authority  
36 for any of this. Think it will stop? Not a chance, not until we pull the plug on the money machine. Remember the words of  
37 Davy Crockett. We are either going to be a society of laws or we will continue to see certain groups receive the largess of the  
38 population because the lawmakers now make up the rules as they go to suit their agenda. **If you let your fear take over, this**  
39 **is what you will continue to protect.**

40 How do you feel about the destruction of our military? Our military, who while on active duty, are forced onto food stamps?  
41 Oh, you didn't know that? Well, let me tell you that I could fill your ears about what goes on in the military and not just from  
42 the time when I worked for DoD. It makes me sick but **your** fear will protect these destructive policies coming out of  
43 Washington, DC because it all starts with the money.

44 *What is it you are protecting with your fear?* That weekend on the fishing boat? The environmental wackos carrying out the  
45 agenda of the one-worlders who are destroying every precious tenet this country was built upon and our God-given right to  
46 private property ownership? The television night after night, filled with mindless drivel? This Saturday on the golf course?  
47 Do **you** know or understand that once this "one world government" is fully in place and functional, these pursuits of **yours**

1 will be dictated by a Gestapo-style "international" police force that will even regulate your thought process? **Is this what**  
2 **you're protecting with your fear?**

3 *What is it you are protecting with your fear?* The pursuit of life, liberty and happiness? Where, I ask you? When you are so  
4 afraid of your own government that you cower at the mere thought of, **not** even taking up arms, but **following the law** and  
5 standing up to a corrupt body of lawbreakers? Just what **is** this so-called "pursuit of life, liberty and happiness"? I **used** to  
6 know before I found out the truth about this agenda of the one-worlders and people like Bill & Hill Clinton, the Rockefeller's,  
7 the Rothschild's, the C.F.R. and the corrupt 50 state legislatures full of politicians whose political ideology **is**  
8 Fascism/Socialism.

9 You say you are protecting everything you've ever worked for? Yes, I understand this. From a security/monetary standpoint,  
10 John and I have a lot to lose. You say you are protecting the roof over your head, your car, your savings account. Yes, I  
11 understand this. But, **you understand this:** Anyone who thinks 1929 was some sort of financial anomaly and it can't happen  
12 again, hasn't done their homework. The "crash" in 1929 was very carefully orchestrated and it was done to set the stage for  
13 implementing "The New Deal"- America's first gigantic step towards Nazism. This fiat money system, **fed from the sweat**  
14 **off your back**, is nothing more than a house of cards waiting for a good puff of wind to come along. We can **never** be free  
15 until we are free of this destructive IRS/FED mechanism. Period...

16 Let's not forget the policies of The Masters of the Game who **own** our State Department - that rotten, corrupt cabinet  
17 conducting and fulfilling the wishes of the one-worlders, while America hangs glued to MTV's daily porn, sports or shopping  
18 at the mall. Just look at the destruction already rained down by that fool, Madeleine Half-Bright. But, the bankers love it.  
19 Know why? Because talk is already underway about the **billions you and I will sweat** to hand over to Kosovo to "rebuild"  
20 what we have destroyed. Who will profit the most? That's right - the banker barons via **you** and me - funneled through the  
21 IMF.

22 We **know** that the law says having a social security number is **voluntary**. Yet, the states of the Union now **force** it's citizenry  
23 to **volunteer into a federal program or be denied a driver's license**. And, what have the citizens of those states done about  
24 this? Not a damn thing. They just continue to give up their rights incrementally either "for the children" or because they're  
25 too lazy to stand up for their own privacy rights. They allow these corrupt judges to sit on the state benches without getting  
26 out and either recalling them or making sure they don't get reelected. That appears to be too much trouble. When one of these  
27 leftist judges hallucinates a decision, it's much easier just to call talk radio and complain.

28 We **know** that it is the social security number that is used to **trick** people into **voluntarily** filing W-4 **Voluntary** Withholding  
29 Certificates and **that's** how the IRS keeps track of your earnings so they can **unlawfully** apply Title 26 against you and  
30 literally **steal** what does not belong to them. **Is this what your fear is protecting?** It must be because if we don't stop it, no  
31 one will. It **won't** come from Congress, their cowardice in standing up to the bankers is so palatable you can almost reach  
32 out and touch it. Not to mention the fact that most of them are so factually challenged and mentally shallow, they don't have  
33 a clue as to what Title 26, Title 42 or any other law says. The concern for these 534 people back there in Babylon by the  
34 Potomac is "reelection." If you haven't figured that out by now, **you are willfully accepting lies**.

35 If you're going to be one of the "I'm too afraid" brigade, quit calling talk radio and complaining. Quit attending "patriot"  
36 meetings or political meetings where you spend an hour or two venting your spleen and then go on home feeling much better  
37 because **you** have told everyone how **you** feel and how **you're** so "sick and tired of all this government corruption." The truth  
38 be told, though, that appears to be all **you're** willing to do - eat, meet and retreat. I guess that's how you will get by looking  
39 in the mirror every morning - you called talk radio, you attended a town hall meeting, you practiced **cosmetic patriotism** last  
40 Sunday at the ballpark when you stood up and sang the National Anthem. But in the end, **you're** too afraid to do the one thing  
41 that must be done to begin curing the cancer instead of just continuing to treat the symptoms.

42 Do you know that the corrupt, shadow government running this country must be smiling like the cat that licked the cream?  
43 Why? Because, America, if you show them that you're too afraid **to follow the law** and that **you** have given up without a  
44 whimper - **they know they have already won**.

45 They will continue plundering our country and sending you or your sons to some foreign country to die over a 600-year old  
46 religious fight because **you're too afraid to stand up and do what has to be done and now they know it**. We **can** win but  
47 it will take **every** man and woman in this country to put their fear aside and stand up for what's right and follow the law.

1 Remember the words of Abraham Lincoln when he said: "To sin by silence when they should protest makes cowards of men."  
2 **Your** protest against this tyranny is not guns, but following the law.

3 It is said the eyes are the mirror to the soul. The next time you look in the mirror, look into your eyes and ask yourself if **you**  
4 can live with fear and wonder how long before **you** fear a knock on the door in the middle of the night by some international  
5 police force? Think it can't or won't happen here in the good old US of A? Well, by God, it **is** happening and the agenda will  
6 be accelerated once the corrupters know America's people will not stand up to tyranny.

7 This is how we reward all of our brave and courageous veterans, our Founding Fathers and the millions who have fought for  
8 us to remain free? We trash their sacrifices because we have become a country who values material goods over freedom and  
9 because we allowed fear to manifest itself in cowardice? This is how we will bow to bondage because when push comes to  
10 shove, the People rolled over instead of stood our ground by following the law? Personally, I weep just thinking of this shame.  
11 Today I heard Taps being played and it sent chills up my spine. Today is good times, guzzling beer and tomorrow is another  
12 day off work. Do you remember the last time **you** heard Taps? Did it not touch your soul and make **you** yearn to protect our  
13 Children's birthright by doing as those before us - stand up against tyranny?

14 Let me again use the words of a man who must have known great fear in his time because his skin was black:

15 *"Power concedes nothing without a demand. It never did, and it never will. Find out just what the people will*  
16 *submit to and you have found out the exact amount of injustice and wrong which will be imposed upon them; and*  
17 *these will continue till they have resisted with either words or blows, or by both. The limits of tyrants are*  
18 *prescribed by the endurance of those whom they suppress."*  
19 *[Frederick Douglass, 1849]*

20 I guess I see what my country is willing to submit to: Let the plunder and destruction of our God- given rights go on - after  
21 all, they are leaving you a little to eat and a *comfortable illusion* of freedom. At least for a while.

22 You may be able to look in the mirror and live with what you see, but I cannot. I cannot because I would rather die than  
23 appear a coward in the eyes of Almighty God. I cannot because I would rather die than appear a coward in the eyes of my  
24 daughter, my family and my country...

25 But the rest of you in the "I'm too afraid" brigade: Do you expect just a percentage of this population to protect **your** rights?  
26 Do you think it's **your** due that because **you're** afraid, then me, Larry Becraft, Bill Benson, Steffen Bertsch and millions of  
27 others should take **your** place and stand up for **your** freedom because **you** have confused fear with cowardice? Better think  
28 again - **it's everyone's responsibility.**

### 29 **1.11.9 The Views Expressed in This Book are Overly Dogmatic or Extreme**

30 Some of our readers after viewing our book or our website state something like the following:

31 *"The views expressed in your The Great IRS Hoax book and on your website seem overly dogmatic. Some people,*  
32 *and especially those from the government, might try to use this characteristic about your writings to describe you*  
33 *as an extremist. What do you have to say to them about this?"*

34 The fact of the matter is that the Truth does tend to appear dogmatic no matter what field you are in. Jesus Himself  
35 acknowledged this fact when he stated the following in Matt. 10:34-38:

36 *"Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword. For I have come*  
37 *to set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law;*  
38 *and a man's enemies will be those of his own household. He who loves father or mother more than Me is not*  
39 *worthy of Me. And he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who does not take*  
40 *his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me."*  
41 *[Matt. 10:34-38, Bible, NKJV]*

42 What I believe Jesus was referring to in the passage above was Truth, because in another passage He said:

43 *"I am the way, **the truth**, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."*  
44 *[John 14:6, NKJV]*

1 Truth has a natural tendency to divide and polarize people just like Jesus did, because both Truth and Jesus were synonymous.  
 2 The reason for this is that when we claim that something is true, any contrary or conflicting opinion expressed by anyone  
 3 else must by implication be false or wrong.

4 *“Remember the word that I said to you , ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’ If they persecuted Me, they  
 5 will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do to you  
 6 for My name’s sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me.*

7 *If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin. He  
 8 who hates Me hates My Father also. If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would  
 9 have no sin; but now they have seen and also hated both Me and My Father. But this happened that the word  
 10 might be fulfilled which is written in their law, ‘They hated Me without a cause.’”  
 11 [John 15:20-21, Bible, NKJV]*

12 Most people do not enjoy being accused of making false or wrong statements (which are both sins) and therefore may react  
 13 strongly to our true claims or statements, just like people from the government especially reacted strongly to what Jesus said.

14 In most cases, the reason people will confront and criticize those who claim to be making true statements is that they have a  
 15 personal and often financial stake in the outcome which qualifies them to be described as having a conflict of interest and to  
 16 be judging “unrighteously”. Persons who have such a conflict of interest cannot judge righteously and will often feel guilty  
 17 enough about this conflict to be reluctant to admit or identify the extent of their personal interest because this could then be  
 18 used as a means to discredit their comments. Consequently, they will try to conceal the extent of the personal or financial  
 19 involvement in the issues under discussion. When you hear anyone criticizing our work for being dogmatic, you might want  
 20 to ask them the following simple questions. If they either refuse to answer or answer any of the questions in the affirmative,  
 21 then their comments or opinions should be discounted and not be taken seriously because of an obvious conflict of interest:

- 22 1. Would you gain financially or personally, either directly or indirectly, if The Great IRS Hoax book or the Family  
 23 Guardian Website were discredited? (circle one) Yes No
- 24 2. Are you a federal government employee whose pay derives from income taxes? (Circle one) Yes No
- 25 3. Has my employer threatened disciplinary action or demotion if I advocated or agreed with or acted upon any of the  
 26 views expressed in The Great IRS Hoax book or on the Family Guardian Website? (circle one) Yes No
- 27 4. Have lenders threatened to withdraw credit already extended to you if you advocated or agreed with or acted upon any  
 28 of the views expressed in The Great IRS Hoax book or on the Family Guardian Website? (circle one) Yes No

## 29 **1.12 Detailed Analysis of Societal Impact of Ending Federal Income Taxes**

30 *“The worst form of inequality is to try to make unequal things equal.” \*  
 31 *[Aristotle]*

32 This section is devoted to a thorough analysis of what would happen to this country financially if people followed the  
 33 recommendations in this book and stopped paying income taxes. It shows current federal receipts and outlays, analyzes trends  
 34 over time, and projects into the future the longer term-affects. You can download an editable copy of the table below by  
 35 going to:

36 SEDM Exhibit #09.030  
<http://sedm.org/Exhibits/ExhibitIndex.htm>



# ANALYSIS OF FINANCIAL IMPACT OF ENDING FEDERAL INCOME TAXES

By: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

## Assumptions:

1. Federal personal, estate, and gift taxes ended.
2. Medicare, Medicaid ended and families and churches take responsibility for care of older Americans like it used to be.
3. Social security and disability insurance participation is made voluntary and people can stop contributing at any time and collect income based both on their contributions to date and what government can afford to pay them.
4. Social security benefits may need to be reduced in order to balance federal budget.
5. There are other ways to balance the budget after eliminating personal income taxes and we don't advocate any one specific approach. The above assumptions are only one specific example of how to balance the federal budget after the change.

			1998	1999	2000		PROJECTIONS (See note 12)		
1	ECONOMIC HEALTH INDICATORS								
#	Description	Note	Value	Value	Value		Avg rate of annual change(%)	Value in 10 years	Value in 20 years
1.1	Inflation rate	6	1.6	2.2	3.4		46.0%		
1.2	Mortgage rates	10	6.94	7.43	8.06		7.8%	17.0%	36.0%
1.3	Unemployment rate (%)	9	4.5	4.2	4.0		-5.7%	2.2%	1.2%
1.4	Tax rate (% of Personal income)	11	14.4	14.9	15.5		3.6%	22.1%	31.5%
1.5	<i>Misery index (sum of inflation, interest, unemployment, and tax rates)</i>	Calc.	27.5	28.7	30.9		6.2%	56.2%	102.2%
1.6	Annual trade deficit (billions)	5, Tbl. 1	-151.7	-250.9	-364.0		55.2%	-29579.9	-2403768.7
1.7	Gross Domestic Product (billions, curr dollars)	5, Tbl. 1	8,781.5	9,268.6	9,872.9		6.0%	17736.6	31863.7
1.8	GDP growth	5, Tbl. 1	5.6	5.5	6.5		8.2%	14.3	31.4
1.9	National debt as Percent of GDP	Calc.	79.6%	74.5%	69%		-6.6%	34.9%	17.6%
1.10	Federal government income as percent of GDP	Calc.	19.9%	20.2%	20.9%		2.6%	27.1%	35.0%
1.11	Government consumption expenditures & Investment (TOTAL)	5, Tbl. 1	1,538.5	1,632.5	1,741.0		6.4%	3,230.9	5,995.7
1.11.1	Federal	5, Tbl. 1	539.2	564.0	590.2		4.6%	927.4	1,457.1
1.11.2	State and local	5, Tbl. 1	999.3	1,068.5	1,150.8		7.3%	2,331.0	4,721.7

1.12	Population (thousands)	4	270,509	272,945	275,306		0.9%	300,597.6	328,212.7
1.13	Personal income (billions)	5, Tbl 4	7,426.0	7,777.3	8,319.0		5.8%	14,685.7	25,924.9
1.14	Disp. Personal Income (billions)	5, Tbl 4	6,355.0	6,618.0	7,031.0		5.2%	11,661.2	19,340.4
1.15	Avg income per capita	Calc.	27,452	28,494	30,217		4.9%	48,855.9	78,991.0
1.16	Disp. Personal Income (DPI) per capita	8	23,493	24,247	25,539		4.3%	38,793.9	58,928.6
1.17	State and local taxes								
1.18	Personal savings rate (% of Disp. Pers. Income)	5, Tbl 4	4.7	2.4	1.0		-53.6%	0.0	0.0
<b>2</b>	<b>RECEIPTS</b>								
#	Description	Note	Billion	Billion	Billion	Percentage	Avg rate of annual change(%)		
2.1	Individual income taxes	3	828.60	879.50	1,004.50	48.60%	10.2%	2,647.8	6,979.6
2.2	Social insurance and retirement receipts	3	572.00	611.80	652.90	31.59%	6.8%	1,265.0	2,451.1
2.3	Estate and gift taxes	3	24.00	27.70	28.90	1.40%	9.9%	74.1	190.0
2.4	Unemployment taxes	3	26.40	25.60	26.60	1.29%	0.4%	27.8	29.0
2.5	<b>Subtotal personal income taxes:</b>	3	<b>\$1,451.00</b>	<b>\$1,544.60</b>	<b>\$1,712.90</b>	<b>82.87%</b>		1,712.9	1,712.9
2.6	Customs duties	3	17.70	18.40	19.40	0.94%	4.7%	30.7	48.6
2.7	Corporate income taxes	3	186.30	182.20	204.30	9.88%	5.0%	331.7	538.4
2.8	Excise taxes	3	57.60	70.50	69.30	3.35%	10.3%	185.5	496.5
2.9	Other taxes and receipts	3	26.60	42.00	56.30	2.72%	46.0%	2,472.7	108,605.2
2.10	Misc earned revenues	3	7.40	10.50	4.80	0.23%	-6.2%	2.5	1.3
2.11	<b>Subtotal other taxes</b>	3	<b>\$295.60</b>	<b>\$323.60</b>	<b>\$354.10</b>	<b>17.13%</b>		354.1	354.1
2.12	<b>TOTAL RECEIPTS:</b>	3	<b>\$1,746.60</b>	<b>\$1,868.20</b>	<b>\$2,067</b>	<b>100.00%</b>			
<b>3</b>	<b>EXPENDITURES</b>								
#	Description	Note			Billion	Percentage	Avg rate of annual change(%)		
3.1	Social Security	3	378.70	387.70	410.10	20.87%	4.1%	611.6	912.0
3.2	Medicare	3	193.10	185.30	199.40	10.15%	1.8%	238.0	284.1
3.3	Medicaid	3			117.90	6.00%			
3.4	Health	3	124.20	139.90					
3.5	Income security (disability insurance)	3	174.10	181.80	189.80	9.66%	4.4%	292.3	450.1
3.6	Education, training, employment, and social services	3	51.40	56.50	53.30	2.71%	2.1%	65.8	81.2

3.7	<b>Subtotal Social Welfare:</b>	3	\$921.50	\$951.20	\$970.50	49.39%	2.6%	1,257.7	1,629.8
	<b>Defense:</b>	3							
3.8	Veterans benefits	3	158.90	-45.90	115.40	5.87%	-240.2%	3,374.2	98,658.9
3.9	National defense	3	321.60	413.20	397.30	20.22%	12.3%	1,269.4	4,055.6
	<b>Other functions:</b>	3							
3.10	International affairs	3	18.80	20.00	23.90	1.22%	12.9%	80.7	272.6
3.11	General science, space, and technology	3	19.80	17.40	17.60	0.90%	-5.5%	10.0	5.7
3.12	Agriculture	3	16.80	24.80	35.20	1.79%	44.8%	1,424.1	57,616.9
3.13	Administration of justice	3	26.90	29.60	34.40	1.75%	13.1%	118.1	405.4
3.14	General government	3	26.40	20.50	19.50	0.99%	-13.6%	4.5	1.0
3.15	Interest*	3	243.10	230.10	230.20	11.72%	-2.7%	175.9	134.5
	<b>Physical resources:</b>	3							
3.16	Energy	3	1.40	0.50	2.50	0.13%	167.9%	47,530.5	
3.17	Natural resources and environment	3	22.80	24.20	26.70	1.36%	8.2%	58.9	130.0
3.18	Commerce and housing credit	3	25.80	14.30	30.80	1.57%	35.4%	638.1	13,221.4
3.19	Transportation	3	37.90	43.00	48.50	2.47%	13.1%	166.4	571.2
3.20	Community and regional development	3	12.30	12.10	12.50	0.64%	0.8%	13.6	14.8
3.21	<b>Subtotal Core government functions</b>	3	<b>\$932.50</b>	<b>\$803.80</b>	<b>\$994.50</b>	<b>50.61%</b>	5.0%	1,614.0	2,619.5
3.22	<b>TOTAL EXPENDITURES:</b>	3	<b>\$1,854.00</b>	<b>\$1,755.00</b>	<b>\$1,965.00</b>	100.00%	3.3%	2,722.2	3,771.0
<b>4</b>	<b>ASSETS</b>								
#	Description	Note			Billion	Percentage	Avg rate of annual change(%)		
4.1	Cash and other monetary assets	3	96.8	115.2	104.9	11.51%	5.0%	171.4	280.1
4.2	Accounts receivable	3	36.1	35	32.3	3.54%	-5.4%	18.6	10.7
4.3	Loans receivable	3	166.8	183.7	207.6	22.78%	11.6%	620.5	1,854.7
4.4	Taxes receivable	3	27.1	22.7	23.3	2.56%	-6.8%	11.5	5.7
4.5	Inventories and related property	3	166.8	173.3	185.2	20.32%	5.4%	312.8	528.4
4.6	Property, plant, and equipment	3	299.3	298.8	298.5	32.75%	-0.1%	294.5	290.6
4.7	Other assets	3	59.9	54.3	59.7	6.55%	0.3%	61.5	63.4
4.8	<b>Subtotal Assets:</b>	3	<b>\$852.80</b>	<b>\$883.00</b>	<b>\$911.50</b>	100.00%	3.4%	1,271.5	1,773.6
<b>5</b>	<b>LIABILITIES</b>								

#	Description	Note			Billion	Percentage	Avg rate of annual change(%)		
5.1	Accounts payable	3	90	85.8	91	1.33%	0.7%	97.5	104.6
5.2	Federal debt securities held by the public	3	3717.7	3631.6	3408.5	49.77%	-4.2%	2,212.5	1,436.1
5.3	Federal employee and veteran benefits payable	3	2685.1	2600.7	2757.8	40.27%	1.4%	3,184.4	3,677.0
5.4	Environmental and disposal liabilities	3	224.5	313.2	301.2	4.40%	17.8%	1,555.1	8,028.9
5.5	Benefits due and payable	3	77.6	73.8	77.8	1.14%	0.3%	79.9	82.0
5.6	Loan guarantee liabilities	3	37.7	35.1	37.3	0.54%	-0.3%	36.1	35.0
5.7	Other liabilities	3	154.6	169	175	2.56%	6.4%	326.4	608.8
5.8	<b>Subtotal Liabilities:</b>	3	<b>\$6,987.20</b>	<b>\$6,909.20</b>	<b>\$6,848.60</b>	100.00%	-1.0%	6,195.8	5,605.2
<b>6</b>	<b>NET WORTH</b>		<b>(\$6,134.40)</b>	<b>(\$6,026.20)</b>	<b>(\$5,937.10)</b>				
<b>7</b>	<b>ANALYSIS OF ENDING INCOME TAXES NOW</b>								
#	Description	Note	Value	Units	Calculation	formula			
7.1	Income tax revenue lost	Calc.	1,033.40	Billion	(Item 2.1 + Item 2.3) in FY2000 column.				
7.2	Savings on federal government expenditures for Medicare, Medicaid, and health expenses	Calc.	317.30	Billion	(Item 3.2)+(Item 3.3) + (Item 3.4)				
7.3	Net revenue loss	Calc.	716.10	Billion	(Item 7.1)-(Item 7.2)				
7.4	Percent revenue lost from changes	Calc.	41.00%	%	(Item 2.1 + Item 2.3) in Percentage column.				
7.5	Total federal government receipts	Calc.	1,350.90	Billion	(Item 2.12)-(Item 2.1+Item 2.3) in FY2000 column				
7.6	Federal government income as percent of GDP following elimination	Calc.	6.88%	%	((Item 2.5)-(Item 3.2)-(Item 2.1))/(Item 1.7) for FY2000 column				
7.7	Annual disposable federal government income after debt payments	Calc.	1,120.70	Billion	(Item 7.5)-(Item 3.15 in FY2000 column)				
7.8	Personal income (billions)	Calc.	9,035.1	Billion	(Item 7.3)+(Item 1.13 in FY2000 column)				
7.9	Disp. Personal Income (billions)	Calc.	7,747.1	Billion	(Item 1.14 in FY2000 column)+(Item 7.5)				
7.10	Percent change in Disp. Personal Income	Calc.	10.2%	%	((Item 7.9)-(Item 1.14 FY2000 column))/(Item 1.14 FY2000 column)				
7.11	Avg income per capita	Calc.	\$32,818.39	\$	(Item 7.8)/(Item 1.12)*1,000,000				

7.12	Disp. Personal Income (DPI) per capita	Calc.	\$28,139.96	\$	(Item 7.9)/(Item 1.12)*1,000,000
------	--	-------	-------------	----	----------------------------------

**NOTES AND SOURCES:**

1. The Note column indicates the note in this list that is pertinent for the corresponding row.
2. Rate of annual changes is computed by using the previous two years of fiscal data and projecting a trend line showing the rate of change.
3. Items 2 through 6 derive from the *Financial Report of the U.S. Government*, available from: <http://www.fms.treas.gov/fr/index.html>
4. Source is <http://landview.census.gov/prod/2001pubs/statab/sec01.pdf>
5. SOURCE: <http://www.bea.doc.gov/bea/ARTICLES/2001/08august/0801GDP.pdf>. See <http://www.bea.doc.gov/> for overall list
6. SOURCE: <http://landview.census.gov/prod/2001pubs/statab/sec15.pdf>, No. 772
7. SOURCE: <ftp://ftp.bls.gov/pub/special.requests/cpi/cpi.ai.txt>
8. Disposable income is income after payment of personal taxes.
9. SOURCE:  
[http://data.bls.gov/servlet/SurveyOutputServlet?series\\_id=LFU21000000&years\\_option=all\\_years&periods\\_option=specific\\_periods&periods=Annual+Data](http://data.bls.gov/servlet/SurveyOutputServlet?series_id=LFU21000000&years_option=all_years&periods_option=specific_periods&periods=Annual+Data)
10. SOURCE: <http://www.federalreserve.gov/releases/H15/data/a/cm.txt>
11. Percent of personal income spent on state and federal taxes
12. Value includes adjustment for inflation rate by projecting average inflation rate into future.

1 From the above facts and analysis, we can draw the following conclusions about what would happen if Subtitle A federal income taxes were ended and the IRS were forced  
2 to comply with existing law by admitting that the income tax is entirely voluntary:

- 3 1. Ending the federal income tax would decrease net federal revenues by only 41% and an amount of \$716 billion.
- 4 2. A reduction of 41% in federal revenues could be made up for by:
  - 5 2.1. An apportioned direct tax against each state based on population as permitted by the U.S. Constitution in Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3 and Article 1, Section 9,  
6 Clause 4.
  - 7 2.2. A large cut in federal spending.
- 8 3. If the federal government was more accountable to the states for its income because of the requirement for apportionment, it would be:
  - 9 3.1. Less likely to be tyrannical with state's rights or jerk around the states with such things as acts that require states to collect Social Security Numbers from persons  
10 who are getting their driver's license.
  - 11 3.2. More likely to limit its own spending and to avoid deficit spending, because it would have fewer ways to raise significantly more revenue.
- 12 4. Since liability for most state income taxes is contingent on payment of federal income taxes, then state income tax liability would be eliminated also.
- 13 5. Affects on the Federal Reserve:
  - 14 5.1. The Federal Reserve, which is a PRIVATE corporation, would lose significant control over most banks worldwide, because:
    - 15 5.1.1. Congress could no longer afford to borrow as much money because their revenues would be reduced by 41%.
    - 16 5.1.2. Without income tax liabilities, most banks could no longer demand social security numbers to comply with tax code so you wouldn't have to provide it.
  - 17 5.2. The federal government would have to curtail the use of monetary policy through the Federal Reserve because it could not afford to monkey with the economy by  
18 using debt to counter adverse business cycles. This country's Keynesian economics would then fall out of favor because the public debt needed to perpetuate it  
19 could no longer exist.
- 20 6. There would be a significant change in the job market:
  - 21 6.1. IRS staffing could be shrunk by probably 50%, because 50 percent of its revenues come from personal income taxes.
  - 22 6.2. Tax preparers would need to find another line of work, since they would have nothing they could charge for.
  - 23 6.3. Probably half of the lawyers in the country would need to find a decent and honorable line of work *finally*. We wouldn't need probate attorneys, living trusts to  
24 escape taxes, tax shelters, or offshore bank accounts or investments.
  - 25 6.4. There would be massive cuts in the accounting field, since it would suddenly be much simpler to comply with all the laws and regulations regarding taxes.
  - 26 6.5. Companies would probably be able to lay off 2/3 of their payroll people, because this job function would get much simpler without the need to deduct taxes.
- 27 7. There would be far less reason for financial institutions to need or want a Social Security Number from depositors, since very few profit generating investments would  
28 result in a federal tax liability.
- 29 8. Much greater individual freedom would be the result, as individuals (natural persons) would:
  - 30 8.1. Have 10% more disposable income per capita.
  - 31 8.2. Could use the increase in their income to:
    - 32 8.2.1. Donate more to their favorite charity or church (which would also help take care of those with medical expenses no longer covered by Medicare and  
33 Medicaid)
    - 34 8.2.2. Put their children in private schools and get them away from the harmful effects of public schools.
    - 35 8.2.3. Help their families, and especially older people in the family who need medical care (to replace Medicare and Medicaid).
  - 36 8.3. Have ultimate privacy about their own financial affairs and would answer to *no one*.
  - 37 8.4. Would no longer be required to incriminate themselves.
  - 38 8.5. Would have more autonomy, respect, and authority in their own families, because children would need to depend more on their parents and other family members  
39 for charity and help until they can get on their own two feet.

1 9. Political effects of the changes would be as follows:

- 2 9.1. Terrorism would decline, because our federal government would have far fewer resources to meddle militarily in the affairs of other countries. Since we would  
3 then have to leave these countries alone, they would quit getting pissed at us and hijacking our planes.
- 4 9.2. The country would still be able to afford the defense system it has now, and its security would not be jeopardized.
- 5 9.3. The financial interests who benefit from perpetuating the tax system would lose their financial power and their financial grip over politicians through campaign  
6 contributions. Such special interest (PAC) groups include accountants, tax preparers, legal book publishers, law schools, tax and estate and trust attorneys, payroll  
7 people, and payroll software companies.
- 8 9.4. There would be fewer lobbyists in Washington, because there would be far less government cash to spend.
- 9 9.5. Our federal government would have to go back to focusing on its core functions:
- 10 9.5.1. Defense.
- 11 9.5.2. Courts.
- 12 9.5.3. Criminal justice.
- 13 9.5.4. Promotion of trade and commerce.
- 14 9.6. The amount of money the federal government could borrow would be much less because its revenues would be less. Just like individuals, your borrowing power  
15 depends on disposable income after making payment on current debts.
- 16 9.7. There would be less partisanship in Congress, because there would be less money to fight about and fewer ways to raise significantly more.
- 17 9.8. There would be a natural check on the size of federal government because most of federal revenue would come from taxes on imports. If the government got too  
18 large and charged too much for import taxes, other countries would be just as protective of their markets and our exports would go down. The system would  
19 naturally correct itself.
- 20 9.9. Mostly social programs would need to be cut and maybe even completely privatized in recognition of the fact that the Ponzi Scheme called Socialist Security would  
21 no longer be financially viable.
- 22 9.10. Keynesian economics and federal government meddling into our economy would be far less frequent, because the feds would have fewer resources with which to  
23 meddle.
- 24 9.11. Federal elections would cease to be a vehicle of economic equalization. For instance, there would no longer be a financial incentive for older people to vote in  
25 congressmen and representatives who would perpetuate robbing the rich or the young to give to the poor or old. This would eliminate the use of the government  
26 for class warfare purposes, and would make politics far more objective and far less controversial.
- 27 9.12. Since the government would consume far less of the national income and very little personal income, federal politics would become less relevant and state politics  
28 would become correspondingly more relevant for the average American.

29 10. Legal affects:

- 30 10.1. Federal courts and judges would no longer derive their pay from income taxes paid by individuals, and therefore would no longer have the conflict of interest they  
31 currently do in attempting to illegally enforce a voluntary income tax against Americans. This would produce a more objective legal system.
- 32 10.2. Law schools would have to focus on lines of business other than taxation.

33 11. Business climate:

- 34 11.1. The rate of new business failures would go dramatically down. Income taxes are a big drain on most small businesses, and it is very difficult, especially when they  
35 are first starting up, to deal with all of the payroll, tax, insurance, and employee benefit drain on their income. A very high percentage of first-time businesses fail  
36 because the taxes are so high. However, if there were no income taxes, then their cash flow situation would be drastically improved and the complexity of managing  
37 their business would be reduced, which would give most businesses more time to focus on customer satisfaction, which would thereby improve their profits and  
38 viability.
- 39 11.2. The price of goods and services would go down probably 20-30%, because businesses would not have to build in so many taxes into the price of their products and  
40 services.
- 41 11.3. The profitability of most small businesses would go dramatically up.

11.4. Employees would have a lot more take home pay, so they would have more spendable income, which would really promote an expansion of the economy and a redirection of income away from inefficient government projects toward a more consumer-oriented mentality.

12. Family affects:

12.1. Many families who currently have two breadwinners would only need one. The wife could quit her job and take care of the children or elderly parents. Surveys indicate that a majority of women would stay home to raise their children if it was economically feasible, and elimination of income taxes would make this situation a reality. The children would turn out better than before because they would get more attention and supervision. Traffic congestion on our freeways would go down because with fewer women in the workforce, the traffic would be reduced by probably 1/3.

12.2. Divorce rates would go down because there would be less financial stress on the family and because the majority of divorces are caused by disputes over money or the lack of it. With a lower divorce rate, more people would get married because there would be a renewed faith in marriage.

12.3. More people would choose to home school their kids, resulting in a better educational system.

12.4. More parents could afford to take their children out of public schools and put them into private schools. This would create more competition for the public schools and raise their standards.

12.5. The more traditional model for families, where the man is the breadwinner, would be much more common than it is today, because much more families could afford to implement it without paying income taxes.

Of the above changes and affects, the ones most likely to produce grass-roots criticism are the elimination of Medicare and Medicaid. Older people are likely to try to use guilt and demagoguery to claim that they have been abandoned by their society and their government and aren't being taken care of. They will try to state that they have a "right" to collect these benefits and to expect to be taken care of by their government. We definitely think older people should be taken care of, but not by the bungling and inept government. Remember the following when you hear this kind of demagoguery and socialist mantras:

1. The family and the church are and always have been the only proper place to deal with the needs of the elderly, the young, and disadvantaged, and not the government. This is so because they enforce accountability, compassion, and personal responsibility, which the government has never been (and simply can't) be good at fostering. Charity must be voluntary to be effective. Grace and the operation of the law by force are fundamentally incompatible with each other. Charity mandated through the force of law is not charity, but extortion and plunder that encroach on our freedom and liberty, plain and simple.
2. The Supreme Court ruled in the case of Helvering v. Davis, 301 U.S. 619 (1937) and Flemming v. Nestor, 363 U.S. 603 (1960), that Social Security (and by implication all other government social programs!) are NOT insurance and are NOT a contract. The government isn't obligated to pay you back anything, much less even the amount of money you put into any social (or should we say socialist?) program (see section 2.9.1 for further details on this).
3. It's unethical and immoral for older people who can't afford their own medical bills to misuse their electoral power to compel the government to extort money from younger or working people to support them. It is unethical and a conflict of interest for any individual to vote in a favor of any law or politician who promises them any kind of financial or personal benefit. Such a conflict of interest can produce nothing but tyranny, slavery, and socialism in our country and ought to be against the law, plain and simple. This very idea undermines our republican form of government by turning a **REPUBLIC** into a **TOTALITARIAN SOCIALIST DEMOCRACY**. The cause of liberty in a free country should always be superior to the needs of individuals. That is why we believe that any person who stands to gain financially or directly by voting in a referendum on a particular piece of welfare legislation that would benefit them ought to be mandatorily disqualified from voting on that issue, or any candidate who is promoting that issue in order to prevent abuses of electoral power. This would prevent the spread of socialism and tyranny and excessive taxation of the rich for the benefit of the poor. For the same reason, anyone who takes more from the government than they earn in wages from private employment also ought to be disqualified from voting. This was how our country started out, if you look at the Article IV of the Articles of Confederation, privileges of citizenship (and also voting) were extended to inhabitants with the following phrase:

"... the free inhabitants of each of these states, paupers, vagabonds and fugitives from Justice excepted, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several states"



